



A SURVEY OF MEDIEVAL INDIAN ASTROLABES

By
VIJAI GOVIND

Amidst all the historical astronomico-mathematical Instruments used by the Muslim astronomer-geographers in India in the medieval times, the most familiar was the astrolabes in various forms which undoubtedly occupies a place of considerable significance in the history of scientific Instruments in India. The astrolabe has had a long history at their credit. The word is derived from the two Greek Words meaning thereby 'a star' and 'to take'.

Except Astrolabes, there can hardly be said to have been any instrument of precision before the invention of the telescope, the Microscope and the Verniers. But as necessity known no law it becomes the mother of invention. Since the need for the land measure, for levelling and the measurement of the heights was keenly felt by the Astronomer-geographers, the world developed several interesting instruments, without which the Astronomical observations on scientific lines would not had been possible in medieval times. In ancient times, it is held that the ancient surveyors measured distances by the use of a rope or a wooden rod. The unit of measurement differed in different culture-areas in different times. They laid off right angles by the use of an instrument resembling the carpenter's square of the present day.²

Astrolabe is a versatile scientific Instrument with wide applications in astronomy, geography, surveying and in astrology, and played an important role in the scientific investigations of the medieval times in the Middle East, Latin Europe and India.

The antiquity^{2a} of Astrolabes dates back atleast to Hipparchus (150 B.C.) and perhaps even earlier to Eratosthenes. It appears that the Alexandrian Greeks were acquainted with instruments of this type in the 6th and 7th Centuries, John Philoponus and Severus Sebokht wrote treatises on the instrument. Further perfection and development of astrolabes were without doubt due to the Arab astronomers and scientifically trained master craftsmen. In Europe its brilliant period coincided with Renaissance until it was superseded by telescopes and their varied applications in astronomy and other fields. In the Middle East, India and elsewhere where the introduction of telescope and related instruments were delayed astrolabe continued to remain the versatile instrument that it was.

till the end of the 18th century. In India, the majority of Astrolabes that have so far come to light belong to the 17th and 18th Centuries, although a few pieces of much older date and those constructed as late as the 19th Century are known. Dickenson and Howarth³ holds that in many ways it is the forerunner of the modern sextant, a more sophisticated instrument. It became a favourite instrument to the Muslim scientists who effected many improvements on the older models.

As a result of many improvements the Muslim scientists used the astrolabes for finding the height of any star on immediate observation and thereby knowing the hours, day and night already spent, then in addition to solving many problems of spherical Astronomy it was useful in undertaking Geodetic operations e.g. for calculating the distance of an accessible place, the height of a building, the depth of a well whose diameter could be measured. It is obvious that such a small Instrument would not give great accuracy and especially in the case of observations connected with celestial phenomena, where on account of the precession of the equinoxes and the diminution of the obliquity of the ecliptic, variations occur over a period of time. It was only after the advent of telescope, the modern sextant and theodolites gave precession to our observations and measurements. In fact till the 17th Century the mariners went on using the astrolabes for the direct measurement of the altitude of the sun.

It is not intended to provide a history of Astrolabe making, but some of the outstanding makers of this instrument and other writers on the subject deserves passing mention. The earliest makers of the astrolabes among the Muslims were al-Fazārī (d. 796 A.D.), al-Nairīzī (d. 972 A.D.), Al-Khāzīm (i.e. Kitāb Zīz as-Safīh), Al-Khujandī (d. 382 A.H./922 A.D. flourished in the Court of Fakhr ad-Dawla). The Buwāhid, constructed an instrument known as 'Sudas al-Fakhrī (some kind of Astrolabe) by means of which the latitudes of the places were found out. It has been called the forerunner of the modern Sextant⁴. Al-Jillī (971 A.H. 1029 A.D., al-Sāghānī and Rustom al-Kūhī of Baghdad (towards 1000 A.D.) are also worthy of mention. Al-Bīrūnī was not only a great writer on instruments in use in his several *Risālas*⁵ on *Usturlab* and in the *Kitāb al-Taḥḥim*,⁶ but he also mentions al-Khujandī, his friend and contemporary Abu-Sa'īd as-Sinjārī (maker of a big Astrolabe), and al-Jillī. Al-Bīrūnī himself was no less an inventor of many instruments besides his Astrolabe.⁷

In the west al-Zarqālī (1029-1088 A.D.) was the outstanding maker of astrolabes and his *Safīha* exerted the most-far-reaching influence on the use of the improved astrolabes in Europe. Later in

the East, Badī al-Zamān (A D 1139/40) Uṣṭurlābī was one of the most efficient astrolabe maker of the time⁸ He also constructed a celestial sphere and a globe among other Instruments

¹ The continued use and construction of good instruments is evident in the days of ullugh Beg at Samerkuand It was quite lately, the craft spread to India, where from the Humayun's time onwards the family of Dīā ud Dīn uṣṭurlābī constructed many astrolabes during three to four generations⁹ In India the majority of the Muslim and the Indian Astrolabes that have so far surveyed are mainly of two types¹⁰

1 Planisphaerium or Flat (astrolabium planisphaerium i.e. Saṭḥī or musaṭṭah or Dhat as-Ṣafih type which consists of several tablets

2 Spherical

The commonest is the first type which represent the projections of the celestial sphere on a flat surface The second is the representation of the sphere itself, while the third is the projection of a straight line of the projections of the sphere on a plane The majority of the astrolabes, so far come to light are flat a few spherical examples are also recorded but representatives of the Linear type have not yet been met with in India

The flat astrolabe consists of a circular disc of which the front face (*wadjiḥ*) has usually a raised rim (*kuffa*) and the back (*Zahar*) plane Called variously by name 'mother', 'mater' (*umm*), the disc is provided with a projecting part the throne or *kursī* to which is attached a ring (*halqa*) for the purpose of suspending the instrument in the vertical position The raised rim is graduated into 36 degrees and generally marked at intervals of 5 or 6 degrees beginning from the upper end of the vertical line In some, the four quadrants are separately graduated into 90 degrees The inner plane surface of several astrolabes are engraved with the names of places (*al bilad*), and their latitudes (*aruḍ*) and longitudes (*itwāl*) within a series of concentric circles In some astrolabes, the positions of places with respect to Mecca are indicated by *inhirāf* (inclination), *masafat* (distance) and *jihat* (point of the compass) In some astrolabes, the ventor is engraved with projections of the celestial spheres for a particular latitude and in some it is simply left blank

The back of the astrolabe contains several information of astronomical, astrological and geographical consequence as also tables for calculations Generally, the rim of each of the two upper quadrants is graduated into 90 degrees One of the two upper quadrants

usually the left, is engraved with horizontal lines from the vertical line to the periphery,—in some both horizontal and vertical lines, to serve the purpose of a graphic table of sines. The other contains declination graphs. The two lower quadrants are engraved with shadow scales, one at the periphery in both the lower quadrants and the other in the form of a rectangle. The scales are based on the divisions of the style into twelve parts or fingers (*asābi'a*) or into seven feet (*aqdām*) and are given for both *umbra recta* (*mustawī*) and *umbra versa* (*ma'kūs*). The nature of the shadow scale reveals that it is engraved at the sides of the rectangle and also at the beginning at the rim near the horizontal line.

Certain astrolabes contain a number of semicircles in the space between the periphery and the rectangular shadow scale, which are engraved with the names of the twelve signs of the zodiac, 28 *manzils* (lunar mansions), division of each sign into three parts 10, 20 and 30 (decans), and the planetary Lords. Special tables such as Egyptian Table of Hudud (limits), Table of Trigons or Triplicates, Table of Climates etc are engraved in some astrolabes in the space within the rectangular shadow scale. Others contain calendrical information.

The majority of astrolabes contain a number of discs or circular tablets which can be fitted within the mother and fixed with the help of a pin passing through a hole at the centre of the mother and each of the tablets, one of them is a special tablet called '*ankabūt*' or *shabakah*, that is '*Spider*' or '*rete*'. It is skilfully cut so as to show up the ecliptic circle with the names of the Zodiac and a graduated circle engraved on it and a number of pointers or indicators (*shaziwa*, *shatba*) containing the names of a few prominent stars. The ornamental character of the astrolabe is due much to the design of the '*ankabūt*'. It has a pointer (*murī*) attached to the ecliptic at the top and a peg (*mudīr*) on the rim diametrically opposite, with which it can be roated within the mother.

Other tablets called *ṣafāh* are engraved with stereographic projections of the horizon, circles of altitudes (*almuṣanṣarāts*), the two tropics the equator, azimuth and hour circles for a particular latitude. In this type, the equator is taken as the plane of projection and either of the poles as the observer's station. The latitude corresponding to the projections and the duration of the longest day in hours minutes are engraved. The tablet for the latitude 62½° is called the tablet for measures on the *ankabut* (*Ṣafihah Mizān alankabūt*) because the coordinates of stars on the spider can be read with its help. The *almuṣanṣarāts* are engraved at intervals of 1°, 2°, 3°, 6° to 10° on account of which the astrolabes are classified as complete (*tamm*), bipartite (*nisfi*), tripartite (*thulthi*);

sexpartite (sudsi) and 'ashri'. Like the *ṣaḥīḥ mīzān-al-'ankabūt*, there is another special tablet containing projections of horizons (*āfāqiah*), often engraved on one side of the same tablet of which the other side contains the 'ankabūt' coordinates.

To avoid the necessity of using separate tablets for different latitudes, inherent in equatorial projections, al-Zarqālī devised the horizontal projections in which the Solstitial column is taken as the plane of projection and either of the equinoctial points as the centre of projection. One such Zarqālī astrolabe has also been reported.

Another important component of the astrolabe is the dioptré or revolving piece (*al-iḍāde*). The dioptré is bevelled at the centre and provided with a hole for fitting it at the back of the astrolabe by means of the pin (*quṭb*). The *al-iḍāde* has at each end a perforated tile (*libna*) for sighting purpose. Both the arms are graduated.

For the study of the salient features of the large number of Medieval Indian Astrolabes, which were used in India, it would be necessary to categorise them under two heads:—

- (1) Astrolabes deposited in the Museum/Institutions/Libraries.
- (2) Astrolabes deposited in the Private Collections.

In the former, the astrolabes are actually preserved as a historical pieces while in the later they are reported as the private collections by the number of indologists. Under the former, the astrolabes deposited in the different organizations of Delhi, Jaipur, Calcutta, Patna, Hyderabad, Rampur, Varanasi and Lucknow are worthy of mention.

1. Astrolabes deposited in the Museums, Organization/Institutions of India:

(A) Astrolabes of the National Museum, New Delhi.

1. Vuhlomala's undated Astrolabe.
2. Dharma Chand's undated Astrolabe.
3. Gulam Qādir of Kapurthala, student of Ballumal, astronomer of Lahore (1278 A H samvat 1918).
4. An unknown, undated Astrolabe.
5. An unknown, undated Astrolabe
6. An unknown, dated AH 1129, Astrolabe.

(B) Astrolabes of the Astronomical observatory of Maharaj Jai Singh, Jaipur.

1. An unknown, dated 1799 Samvat, A.D. 1877, Astrolabe.

2. An unknown, dated 18th century, Astrolabe.
3. An unknown, dated 18th century, Astrolabe.
4. An unknown, undated, Astrolabe.
5. An unknown, undated, Astrolabe.
6. Ibn Mulla Qāsim Muhammad Ibn Hafiz Isa b. Allāh Dad Humāyṇi Zilā-al-Din Astrolabe (constructed in the 23rd year of the reign of Aurangzeb) A.H. 1091, 1630 A.D.
7. An unknown, dated 1067 A.H., 1657 A.D. Astrolabe (31st year of the reign of Shāhajahan).
8. An unnamed, undated (17th century A.D.) Astrolabe.

(C) Astrolabes of the Indian Museum, Calcutta.

1. J'afar ibn' Umral Kırmanī's undated Astrolabe.
2. Muhammad Āmin ibn Muhammad Tāhir's undated Astrolabe.

(D) Astrolabes of the Mulla Feroz Library, Bombay.

1. An unnamed, dated, quadrant A.H. 1136, 1723 A.D.
2. A'bd-al-A'ly's dated Astrolabe 1119 A.H. i.e. 1707.

(E) Astrolabes of the Archaeological Museum, Red Fort, New Delhi.

1. Zilā-al-Din Muhammad Ibn Mulla, A.H. 1087, A.D. 1676, Astrolabe.
2. Muhammad Sālīh of Tatta, dated, A.H. 1070 A.D. 1660. Astrolabe.
3. An unnamed, undated, Astrolabe.
4. An unnamed, undated, Astrolabe.
5. An unnamed, undated (13th century), Astrolabe.
6. An unnamed, undated (17th century), Astrolabe.
7. Muhammad Muqīm ibn Mullah, b. Isa Ibn al-Haddād Uṣṭurlābi lāhorī Humāyunī, 1034 A.H., 1625 A.D. Astrolabe.
8. Muhammad Muqīm ibn 'Iṣa ibn al-Haddād Uṣṭurlābi Humāyunī Lāhorī, 1047 A.H., 1637 A.D. Astrolabe

(F) Astrolabes of the Rampur Raja Library, Rampur.

1. Sarraj's Astrolabe, 615 A.H. i.e. 1204 A.D.
2. Zilā-'uddīn, son of Muhammad. A.H. 1074 A.D. 1663, Astrolabe

(G) Astrolabes in the Library of Sir Nawab Salarjung Bahadur's Museum, Hyderabad

- 1 Allāh-Dād of Lahore's, Astrolabe 975 A H
- 2 Zīā-uddin Muhammad's, Astrolabe 1064 A H

(H) Astrolabe of the Oriental Library, Bankipur, Patna

- 1 Zīā-uddin Muhammad's dated Astrolabe 1074 A H

(I) Astrolabes of the Nadwātul Ulma Library, Lucknow

- 1 Zīā uddin Muhammad's dated Astrolabe 1059 A H
- 2 & 3 Unnamed, undated Astrolabes

(J) Astrolabes of the Bharat Kala Bhavan, Benaras Hindu University, Varanasi

- 1 Mohd. Mehudi Asphāhani dated Astrolabe 1071 A H
i.e. 1660 A D
- 2 An unnamed, undated Astrolabe (About 18th c)
- 3 An unnamed, undated, Astrolabe (Late 18th or 19th century)

(K) An Astrolabe in the Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute, Poona

- 1 Yantarāj Harnath's dated Astrolabe Samvat 1695, i.e. 1830 A D

2 *Astrolabes in the private collections*

(A) In the Private Collection of Mr J B Patil as reported by M P Kharaghat

(B) In the Private Collection (dated 1074 A H) of Prof Mahfuzal Haq of Presidency College, Calcutta as reported by S S Nadvi (Qaim Muhammad's dated Astrolabe of A H 1034)

(C) In the Private Collection of Abu Baker of Aligarh Muslim University, Aligarh as reported by S S Nadvi

The above listed Astrolabes about forty one in number as already mentioned belonged to their two fundamental types. It would be pertinent here to briefly discuss some of their salient features

(A) *ASTROLABES OF THE NATIONAL MUSEUM, NEW DELHI*¹⁰
*Vuhlomalla's undated*¹¹ *Astrolabe*

It consists of a single brass disc of diameter 9.3 cm and 1.40 mm inscribed in *Devanagari* script and numerals. The face contains

*Dharma Chands' undated Astrolabe.*¹²

1st ring: September June March February August May
October July December November April
January

2nd ring:

July	September	June	March	November	August
May	January	April	December	February	October

The following rings are engraved with the names of the seven days of the week along with months. The rim contains the legend that the upper disc should be moved after four years because in this above mentioned year the month of February has 29 days. The back is marked with a number of annular rings. The inner ring contains the names of twelve signs of the zodiac. In the next ring each zodiac is divided into 30 degrees marked at the intervals of 6 degrees. The next ring contains 60 divisions marked by Arabic numerals 1', 2', 3' to 60. The use of this astrolabe was primarily calendrical.

*Gulam Qādir's Astrolabe*¹³

It is dated in A H 1278 samvat 1918. It was constructed by Gulam Qadir of Kapurthala, a student of Ballumal, astronomer of Lahore under the orders of Raijāda Shankerdas Harbanspurī. It is a flat brass astrolabe inscribed in Arabic numerals and script (*Naskh*). The instrument includes the mater of dia 33.6 cm, the 'ankabut of dia 27.6 cm., two tablets of dia 27.6 cm each and the dioptra (*al-idāde*) of length 29 cm. The tablets are fixed by a pin. The mater has no raised rim unlike most flat astrolabes. There are four rings in the periphery, the first three containing the names of places and their latitudes and longitudes and the fourth innermost ring containing graduations into 360 degrees marked at intervals of 6 degrees. The central space immediately after the rings is engraved with the projections of the two tropics, the *almucanṭarāts*, azimuth circles, hour circles etc. for the latitude 32°. The *almucanṭarāts* are given at intervals of 3 degrees, that is, the astrolabe is a tripartite (*thulthi*). In the back, the upper quadrants contain the usual sine graph and in the lower quadrants, the shadow scales are in digits and feet. The 'ankabut contains the ecliptic circle engraved at its rim with the names of signs of twelve zodiacs, each sign being graduated into 30 degrees marked at the intervals of 6 degrees. The indicators carry the names of 22 stars, — 8 outside the ecliptic circle and 13 within it. One tablet contains the projections of horizons on both sides and the other contains *almucanṭarāts* etc. for latitude 36° on one side only. The astrolabe is a specimen of fine workmanship.

*An unknown undated Astrolabe*¹⁴

The piece consists of one brass disc of diameter 13.2 cm with a circular cut at the centre fitted with a glass piece of diameter 3 cm. The face has engraved on it having a circle of diameter 6.3 cm. The back is fitted with a fixed *al-idāde* of length 13.2 cm. The dioptra has at its two ends two plates at right angles to its face, and it is also provided with sighting holes and slots. The instrument is in complete in its parts.

*An unknown and undated Astrolabe*¹⁵

It is a flat astrolabe made of brass and inscribed in Arabic numerals and script (*Naskh*). It consists of the mater of dia 14 cm, the 'ankabut of dia 12.2 cm and the dioptra of length, all fitted together by a pin passing through a central hole in each piece. The mater has no raised rim. The periphery of the face is graduated into 360 degrees in an inner circle and 60 degrees in an outer circle where it is marked as 1°, 2°, 3° to 60°. The rest of the face within

the circular scale is engraved with projections of the altitude circles (*almucanţarāts*) at intervals of 6 degrees (that is, the astrolabe is a *sudsi*), the azimuth circles the two tropics, the equator, the hour circles, with the two extremities of the horizon marked 'east' (*mash-rīq*) and 'west' (*maghrīb*). The back is divided into four quadrants of which the two upper ones have their peripheries graduated into 90 degrees marked at the interval of 6 degrees. The upper right contains the sine graph and the upper left is kept blank. The lower quadrants contains the rectangular shadow scale, the rim is divided into 15 divisions in each of the lower quadrants, but not marked, giving the impression that the astrolabe was not completed. The 'ankabut contains the ecliptic divided into twelve zodiacs with their names engraved, each sign is subdivided into five parts and marked 6, 12, 18, 24 and 30. Eleven stars are engraved on the indicators (*shazīva*) of the spider.

An unknown and undated Astrolabe 16

The astrolabe is made of brass and is engraved in *Naskhi* character and Arabic numerals. Its component parts are the mater of dia 15.3 cm. (length of the suspension system— 5.5 cm.), the 'ankabut of dia. 13.3 cm. 3 tablets of dia 13.3 cm each, and the dioptra (*al-idade*) of length 13.6 cm. The different pieces are fixed in the mater by a pin passing through a central hole in each piece. The rim of the mater is graduated in an outer circle into 60 divisions, each division being further subdivided into 6 degrees in the next inner circle. The ventor is engraved with three groups of rings each containing the names of places and their latitudes and longitudes. The back contains the sine table on the upper right quadrant and the shadow scales in the two lower quadrants. The remaining space is left blank. The 'ankabut contains the graduated ecliptic with the names of the twelve signs of the zodiacs engraved on it. A few names of stars are engraved on the pointers. Other tablets contains the *almucanţarāts* drawn at the intervals of 6 degrees, the azimuth and hour circles etc. The astrolabe is *saxperlitic* (*sudsi*). The workmanship is ordinary.

An unknown, dated Astrolabe of A. H. 1199 17

It is a flat astrolabe made of brass. It consists of the mater (*umm*) of dia 15.1 cm. (length of the suspension system with *kursi* and *halqa* 9.1 cm.) the spider (*ankabut*) and seven tablets, each of dia 13.5 cm. The dioptra is missing. The astrolabe is inscribed in *Naskhi* character and *abjad* notation for numerals. The raised rim of the mater is graduated into 90 degrees in each quadrant in the anticlockwise direction and marked at the intervals of 5 deg-

rees The ventor is engraved with three groups of concentric rings, each group containing the names of places and their latitudes and longitudes The back is engraved with the sine table (upper left), declination circles (upper right) and the shadow scales, both circular (at the periphery) and rectangular (symmetrically at two lower quadrants) The shadow scales are given in both feet and digits The 'ankabūt contains the usual ecliptic circle divided into twelve parts, each graduated into 30 degrees and marked by the name of a sign of the zodiac The indicators of the spider are engraved with the names of 24 stars One of the seven tablets contains the projections of horizons (*āfāqiyah*) on both sides The remaining tablets contain projections of the two tropics, the *almucantarats*, the hour circles, temporal lines etc for different latitudes The *almucantarats* are given at the intervals of 3 degrees, that is the astrolabe is a tripartite (*thulthi*) one

(B) ASTROLABES IN THE ASTRONOMICAL OBSERVATORY
OF MAHARAJA JAI SINGH, JAIPUR¹⁸

*An Unknown dated Instrument, Samvat 1799, A D 1664*¹⁹

Described as *Yantra Rāj*, it is a tripartite (*thulthi*) astrolabe It marked latitude 27° N It has an ecliptic circle and a ruler The obverse contains azimuth lines for 30°, 60° and 90° and also temporal hour lines The following names of the stars, in their Sanskrit names are engraved *Samudra paksī, Rōhini, Ārdrā, Lubdhaka, Puṣya, Maghā, Hasta, Citrā, Svātī, Anurādhā, Abhijit, Srāvana, Satajīva (Satabhiṣaj) Pūrvabhādrapāda*

*An unnamed, undated Astrolabe (c 18th Century)*²⁰

It is a single brass piece astrolabe, 7 feet in diameter The instrument has an ecliptic circle and a tube sighter The projections of altitude circles, the *almucantarats*, are engraved at intervals of 1°, that is, it is a complete astrolabe (*tāmm*) The projections are for the latitude of 27° N

*An unnamed, undated Astrolabe (c 18th Century)*²¹

It is a large astrolabe consisting of a single disc 7 feet in diameter Some sixty sheets of iron were rivetted together to make this gigantic metal instrument

*An unnamed, undated Astrolabe*²²

It is a flat astrolabe engraved with Devanagari characters It consists of the mater of dia 40.6 cm (16 inches), the spider of dia 36.9 cm, two discs of the same dia and the spider and the

diopetre of length 38 cm. The raised rim of the face is graduated into 360 degrees. The back is divided into the usual four quadrants, containing the sine table and the shadow scales. The declination graphs are for 27° and $29^\circ 39'$. The ecliptic of the spider is graduated at intervals of 6 degrees, but most of the indicators do not carry the names of stars. The tablets contain projections for the latitudes of 27° and 72° degrees and one containing celestial latitudes and longitudes is intended for measuring the positions of the stars on the spider. Kaye describes the instrument as a copy of a Persian astrolabe of inferior workmanship.

An unnamed, undated Astrolabe²³

It is a flat brass astrolabe engraved in *Naskhī* character and *abjad* notation. The mater is 15.24 cm (6 inches) in dia. The rim of the face is graduated in each quadrant into 90 degrees marked at the intervals of five degrees. The ventor is engraved with a series of concentric annular rings containing the names of places and their longitudes. The back has on its upper left quadrant the sine table with periphery graduated into 90 degrees marked at intervals of 5 degrees, and declination circles on the upper right, with the rim graduated in the same manner. The periphery of the two lower quadrants is engraved with the circular shadow scales in feet and digits. The semi-circular rings following the graduated periphery contains the names of the twelve signs of the zodiacs alongwith further divisions of each sign, planets etc. The spider (*anḳabūt*) has engraved on its pointers (*shazīya*) the names of 25 stars. The piece is one of fine workmanship.

Astrolabe of Ibn Mulla Qāsim Muhammad Ibn Hafiz Isa b. Allāh Dād Humayunī, Zia-al-Din, A. H. 1091 A. D. 1680²⁴

The Astrolabe was made for Nawab Iftikhār Khān. This is a 'Zarqālī' astrolabe and is of considerable importance owing to the rarity of its type in India. Its maker belonged to the family of Lahore Astrolabe makers. It is made of brass and consists of a single brass disc two feet in diameter. The instrument is labelled as "*Yantra jara kali sarva desi*". In order to make it universally applicable irrespective of the latitude of the place of observation and without the necessity of using separate disc for different latitudes, horizontal projection was substituted for the polar one. In Zarqālī astrolabes the solstitial colour serves as the plane of projection and one of the equinoctial points as the centre of projection. The Observe, like ordinary astrolabes, has the periphery of its two upper quadrants graduated into 90 degrees marked at the intervals of three degrees. The periphery of the lower quadrants are graduated in

shadow scales The next series of concentric annular rings contain the names of the signs of the zodiacs, the manazils and the planets The central part of the disc is engraved with projections of a sphere and contains a sine table The reverse is engraved with horizontal projections using the plane of the solstitial colour as already mentioned By this method of projection, both the celestial hemispheres are mapped The names of several stars are engraved in *Devanagari* character, e.g., *Marici*, *Pulaha*, etc The names of a number of important towns, e.g., *Halab* (Aleppo), *Tus*, *Kabul*, *Jahanabad* and *Lahore* are engraved and the same projections can be used for reading their longitudes and latitudes The numerals are engraved in *abjad* notation It is engraved on the instrument that it was constructed in the 23rd years of the reign of Emperor Aurangzeb

An unnamed, undated Astrolabe of A H 1067, A D 1657²⁵

It is a brass plane astrolabe inscribed in *Naskhi* characters and *abjad* notation for numerals It consists of the 'mother' or mater of dia. 33 cm (13 inches), the spider ('*ankabūt*') of dia. 30.50 cm and a number of tablets (*safāih*) The length of the *kursi* and the *halqa* taken together above the disc of the mother proper is 23.8 cm The raised rim on the face (*wadji*) is graduated in 360 degrees marked at the intervals of 5 degrees The ventor contains six groups of annular rings, each containing three, and inscribed with the names, latitudes and longitudes of 210 places *inhiṛāfs* (inclination) are not given The rim of the two upper quadrants on the back (*zahar*) is each graduated into 90 degrees marked at intervals of 5 degree from the horizontal to the vertical line The left quadrant is a sinecosine table, the right quadrant contains declination circles with the names of six signs of zodiac each marked against the horizontal and the vertical line in the following order *Horizontal Line Gemini, Taurus, Aries, Pisces, Aquarius, Capricornus, Vertical Line Cancer, Leo, Virgo, Libra, Scorpio, Sagittarius* The two lower quadrants are engraved with the usual shadow scales in feet and digits, both circular at the periphery and rectangular in the centre Immediately after the circular scale at the periphery, there are semi-circular rings engraved with the names of signs, 28 lunar mansions, their divisions in decans etc A special feature of the astrolabe is that it contains in a central rectangle at the back, a table of rising signs The lower right gives a table of the regents of the trigons The '*ankabūt*' is artistically cut to provide a number of indicators engraved with star names and zodiacal signs on the ecliptic circle The tablets contain the projections of the altitude circles, the tropics, the equator, hour circles, temporal lines etc It is engraved that the astrolabe was constructed in the 31st year of the reign of *shāhajahān*

*An unnamed, undated Astrolabe (c 17th century A. D)*²⁶

It is a brass astrolabe of the type of planisphaerum, inscribed in Arabic (*Naskhī*) characters and *abjad* numerals. It consists of the mother (*umm*) of dia 33 cm (13 inches), seven tablets including the '*ankabūt*', each of dia 30 cm and the dioptré (*al-idāde*) of length 28.8 cm. The dia of the mater with the suspending system (the *kursī* and *halqa*) is 52.8 cm. The raised rim of the ventor is graduated into 360 degrees and marked at the intervals of 3 degrees, each degree being further sub-divided into four parts. The back of the astrolabe is divided into four quadrants. The rim of the two upper quadrants is graduated into 90 degrees, marked at the intervals of 3 degrees from the horizontal to the vertical lines, serves the purpose of the sine-cosine table. The two lower quadrants contain the shadow scales, both circular and rectangular in nature. A special feature of the astrolabe lies in its table of climates towards the bottom of the lower half of the back and a rectangular table in the lower left, showing multiples of the differences between the approximately correct length of the tropical year and 365 days. It also has a table of trigons. The '*ankabūt*' comprising of the usual ecliptic circle carrying twelve signs of the zodiacs and a number of stars on its indicators (*shaziya*), shows the forms of constellation animals. The discs are engraved with *almucantarāts*, azimuths, temporal hour lines etc for different latitudes and the longest days corresponding to these latitudes. The *kursī* bears the inscription *yantrarāja* (king of instruments) in *Devanagari*. The workmanship is excellent.

(C) ASTROLABES OF INDIAN MUSEUM, CALCUTTA

²⁷

An undated Astrolabe of J'afar bin 'Umral Kırmanı

²⁸

This is a flat astrolabe made of brass and engraved in Kufic character. Its figures in *abjad* notation are again marked in Kufic character. The various pieces comprising the astrolabe include the mater of dia 7.8 cm, the total height of the instrument with the suspension system (*Kursī* plus *halqa*) being 12.5 cm, the spider ('*ankabūt*') of dia 6.5 cm and four tablets of dia 6.5 cm. The dioptré (*alidāde*) is missing. The raised rim of the face is graduated into 360 degrees marked at the intervals of 5 degrees e.g. 5, 10, 15, 20, 25, 30 and so on. The ventor is engraved with a series of concentric rings divided into annular spaces containing the names of places and their latitudes, longitudes etc. The back is divided into four quadrants, the rim of each being graduated into 90 degrees and marked at the intervals of 5 degrees. Next to the scale is a circle containing the names of the twelve zodiacs, three in each quadrant, begin-

ning with *al-Jaddi* (Capricorn) in the upper left quadrant in the anticlockwise direction and ending with *al-Qaus* (Sagittarius) in the upper right quadrant. Each sign is again divided into five equal parts. Central space unlike most astrolabes, is engraved with projections of altitudes, the tropics, the equator and the horizon. The lower quadrants however carry the rectangular shadow scales. The 'ankabūt is cut into a number of sharply pointed *shaziyas* (indicators), engraved with star names and carries the usual ecliptic circle with the names of the zodiacs. The tablets contain the projections of horizons, and altitude circle (*almucanṭarāts*), azimuths, hour circle etc for a number of selected latitudes. Workmanship as well as engravings in the Kufic characters are excellent.

An undated Astrolabe of Muhammad Amin ibn Muhammad
Tahir²⁹ ~

It is engraved by Abdul Aimmah. It is a flat brass astrolabe inscribed in Arabic (*Nakshī*) characters. It consists of a 'mother or mater of dia 18.6 cm. and provided with a *kursi* and *halqa* of length 3 cm. the spider ('ankabūt) of dia 16.7 cm. 6 tablets of dia. 16.7 cm. each and the dioptre of length 17.3 cm. One sighting piece from the dioptre is missing. The various pieces are fitted in the mater by a pin passing through a central hole of all the pieces. The raised rim of the face of the mater is graduated into 360 degrees marked at the intervals of 5 degrees. The ventor contains a number of concentric circles providing annular rings engraved with the names of 44 places with their latitudes, longitudes and also their *inḥirāfs* (inclination) and *jihats* (point of compass). The back has on the upper left a quadrant having the sine table the rim being graduated into 90 degrees marked at the intervals of 5 degrees. The upper right is engraved with declination circles. The two lower quadrants contain the two circular shadow scales one marked in feet and the other in digits. The circular scales are followed by semi circular rings engraved with the names of the 28 manazils, names of twelve zodiacs, the decans and their lords. The rectangular shadow scales in feet and digits are engraved in the centre. The trigons and their lords are given in the space within the rectangular scale. The 'ankabut has 44 indicators (*shaziya*) each engraved with the name of a star, in addition to a graduated ecliptic circle marked with the names of twelve signs of the zodiac. The remaining tablets contain the usual stereographic projections of the horizon, the two tropics, the ecliptic altitude circles etc. The projections of the horizons and the measures on the 'ankabut form one tablet. The others exhibit *almucanṭarāts* for different latitudes and their longest days in hours and minutes. The workmanship of the astrolabe is excellent.

(D) *ASTROLABES OF THE MULLA FEEROZ LIBRARY,
BOMBAY.*³⁰

An unnamed dated Quadrant of A H 1136/1723-24 A D ³¹

It is a wooden quadrant probably intended for use as a partial pocket astrolabe. The lines and numerical figures engraved and coloured in red and black indicate delicate and fine workmanship. The quadrant was prepared from a place having the latitude of 41°, which was located in the neighbourhood of Sararqand, a city once famous for its astronomical observatory. The front of the quadrant engraved with equidistant horizontal and vertical lines and provided with a graduated rim (90 degrees marked at intervals of 5°) gives the sine and the cosine scales. The back of the quadrant represents the fourth part of the disc containing the projections of *almucanfarāts* corresponding to a latitude of 41°. Discs with such projections usually form parts of plane astrolabes.

Abdul Ali's dated Astrolabe, A H 1119, 1707 A D ³²

The astrolabe is plane and made of brass. It consists of the mater, the spider, the five discs and the dioptré. The mater is 13.25 cm in dia, the spider and the discs 11.6 cm in dia each and the dioptré 11.5 cm in length. The rim of the mater is graduated in 360 degrees and marked at intervals of 5 degrees. The ventor has eight concentric circles of which the 4th and the 8th are vacant and the remaining two groups of three annular rings are engraved with the names of 45 places and their latitudes and longitudes. At the back, the rim of the upper two quadrants are graduated in 90 degrees from the horizontal line to the vertical and marked at the intervals of 5 degrees. The upper left engraved with horizontal lines from the vertical line to the circumference, is intended for use as a sine table. The upper right is blank. The rim of the lower quadrants contains circular scale for shadow measurements in feet and digits. The rectangular shadow scales for both *umbrā katta* (*mustaww*) and *umbrā versa* (*ma'kus*) in digits (*asabī'a*) and feet (*aqdam*) are engraved in the central region of the two lower quadrants in a symmetrical manner. The spider (*'ankabut*) contains 24 stars in addition to the ecliptic circle with twelve signs of the zodiacs engraved on it. The five tablets contain the usual tablet of horizons, the measures on the *'ankabut*, and circles of altitudes for latitudes 18°, 22°, 32°, 25°, 36°, 29°, 34°, 38° and 40° with the longest day for the latitudes concerned. *Almucanfarāts* are marked for every two degrees of altitude. All numerical figures are in *abjad* notation.

(E) *ASTROLABES OF THE ARCHAEOLOGICAL MUSEUM, RED FORT, NEW DELHI.*¹³

*Zia al-Din Muhammad Ibn Mulla's Astrolabe, A. H 1087,
i.e. A. D. 1676*¹⁴

It is a brass mounted sphere fitted with a horizontal and a vertical ring within which the sphere is placed and is capable of rotation to about any axis. The diameter of the sphere is 6.8 cm. The inner and outer diameters of the two rings are 6.9 cm and 8.7 cm (horizontal ring) and 8 cm (vertical ring). The horizontal ring is graduated and is marked with four cardinal points. The sphere is engraved with the ecliptic and the equator circles. The ecliptic is divided into twelve spaces each containing the names of a sign e.g. *Hamal* (Aries), *Thaur* (Taurus), *Jauza* (Gemini), *Saratan* (Cancer), *Asad* (Leo), etc. Each zodiac is sub-divided at the intervals of two degrees and marked 6, 12, 18, 24 and 30. The positions of large number of stars, each indicated by a dot enclosed in small circles are given, and the names of most of them are clearly engraved in Naskhi characters. Kaye has given the names of 70 of these stars, together with their latitudes and longitudes, their modern equivalents. By a comparison of the longitudes as given on the sphere with those given in Ulegh Beg's Star Catalogue after taking into account the precession of the equinoxes, Kaye determined the age of the spherical astrolabe as A. D. 1664, which is much nearer to the date inscribed on the astrolabe itself.

*Muhammad Salih of Tatta's Astrolabe, A. H 1070, A. D 1660*¹⁵

This is a brass celestial sphere without stand. The stand with the mounting arrangement is probably lost. The diameter of the sphere is 21.2 cm. Arabic (naskhi) script is used in the engravings. Longitudes are engraved as also a few star names and constellations.

*An unknown, undated Astrolabe*¹⁶

It is a brass sphere mounted on a stand. The stand is provided with rings, one horizontal and the other vertical within which the sphere just fits and is capable of rotating in any direction. The diameter of the sphere is 16.2 cm, the inner and the outer diameters of the horizontal ring are 16.3 cm and 18.7 cm respectively. Both the rings are graduated. The vertical ring can be fixed in any position with respect to the horizontal one by means of two pins. The sphere is engraved with ecliptic and equator circles. The ecliptic is engraved with zodiacal signs, each sign being subdivided into 30 deg-

rees and marked at the interval of 5 degrees. The equator is also graduated. Constellation figures are engraved.

An unknown, undated Astrolabe ¹⁷

It is a Brass astrolabe consisting of the 'mother' or mater (*umm*), the spider (*'ankabūt*), five discs (*ṣafiha*), and inscribed in Arabic (*Naskhi*) characters. The dioptré (*al-idāde*) is missing. The diameter of the 'mother' is 24.1 cm, the length of the *kursi* and *halqa*, taken together, is 7.2 cm. The *'ankabūt* and the discs have a diameter of 22 cm each. The rim of the mother is divided into four quadrants, each being graduated into 90 degrees and marked at the intervals of 3°. The ventor is divided into three annular zones, each zone containing three annular concentric rings engraved with the names of places and their geographical latitudes and longitudes. The back (*zahar*) has a graduated scale at the rim in the four quadrants, the upper two being similar and divided into 90° at intervals of 3°. The two lower scales are for measuring shadows and graduated from 1 to 60 feet or digits. The left upper quadrant contains the graphic sine table and the right the declination circles. The lower quadrant contains the names of 12 zodiacs, 28 lunar mansions, shadow scales and astrological tablets and decans with their lords. Of the five discs, one contains the projections of horizons and the measures on the *'ankabut*, and the others are engraved with *almucantarāts* for different latitudes. The astrolabe is of the class of *tamm* (complete) as 90 *almucantarats* are engraved and marked at the intervals of 2 degrees. The duration of the longest day corresponding to the latitude is inscribed on the discs.

An unknown, undated Astrolabe (13th century A D) ³⁸

The astrolabe is made of brass and is engraved in *Kūfic* characters. It consists of the mother or mater (*umm*), the spider (*'ankabut*), and the dioptré (*al-idāde*). The diameter of the mother is 14.3 cm, and with the *kursi* and *halqa*, 18.4 cm. The spider's diameter is 12.6 cm. The *al-idāde* is 12.9 cm in length. All the parts are fixed in the mother with a pin. The ventor of the mother is engraved with a projection of the celestial sphere and its rim is graduated in degrees in groups of five upto 360. The back (*zahar*), divided into four quadrants, the upper two engraved with *Zarqālī* projections and the lower left with a graphic sine table and the edge of the lower right with a shadow scale. The *'ankabut* has 29 *shazaya* or indicators with 29 star names engraved. From the star catalogue and the precession of the equinoxes on it Kaye determined the age of the astrolabe to be around A D 1308 or A D 1287, that is c 13th century A D.

*An unknown, undated Astrolabe (c 17th century A D)*³⁹

It is a brass astrolabe engraved in *Devanagari* characters. It consists of the mother, 17.2 cm in dia and 29.2 cm including the suspension system, the spider, 15.9 cm in dia and two plates, each 15.9 cm in diameter. The dioptra is 15.5 cm in length. The spider contains the usual ecliptic circle with 12 divisions of the zodiac engraved with their Sanskrit names e.g., *Mesa* (Aries), *Vṛṣa* (Taurus), *Mithuna* (Gemini), *Karkata* (Cancer), *Simha* (Leo), etc. The spider has 25 indicators, most of which are engraved with star names in *Devanagari* e.g. *Citrā* (Spica), *Svātī* (Arcturus), *Viśākhā* (Libra), *Abhijit* (Vega), *Sṛavana* (Altair), *Purva Bhādrapāda* (Pegasi), *Rohini* (Aldebaran) etc etc. The venter of the mother is blank, but the back divided into four quadrants contains the graphic table of sines (upper left), declination circles (upper right) and the shadow scales (two lower quadrants). The two plates contain projections of altitudes (*almucantarat*s), temporal hour lines and latitudes with their corresponding longest days (*paramadina*) in *ghatis* and *palas* and the lengths of *chava* (shadow) and *karna* (hypotenuse). One face of one of the two tablets contains the projections of horizons. After the concession of the time units into hours and minutes, the longest day for the latitude of Ujjain, 22° is 13 hr 24 min and that of Ahmedabad, 23° is 13 hr and 32 min.

Muhammad Muqīm ibn Mullah 'Isab ibn al Haddad usturlabī
*Lahorī Humayūnī's Astrolabe (A H 1034, A D 1625)*⁴⁰

It is a brass astrolabe (plane) inscribed in Arabic (*Naskhī*) characters. It consists of the mother or mater, dia 11.4 cm and 16.6 cm including the *kursī* and the *halqa*, the spider (*'ankabut*), dia 12.2 cm five tablets (*sufath*), dia 12.2 each and the dioptra (*al Idade*), 10 cm in length. The rim of the mother is graduated into 360 degrees marked at the intervals of 6 degrees, i.e. 6, 12, 18 etc in *abjad* notations. The venter is marked into two groups of three annular rings further divided into a number of annular spaces but radial lines. Each space is inscribed with the names of some important places and their latitudes and longitudes. The back (*zahr*) is divided into four quadrants. The rim of the two upper quadrants is graduated into 90 degrees from the horizontal line to the vertical and marked at the intervals of 6 degrees. The upper left is engraved with horizontal lines from the vertical line to the rim and serves the purpose of the sine table. The upper right contains the declination circles. The two lower quadrants are engraved with the shadow scales in feet and digits, the names of twelve zodiacal signs and twenty-eight lunar mansions (*manzil*). The name of the maker and date are inscribed within the rectangular space

in the centre of the lower quadrants 33 stars names are engraved on the indicators of the spider, in addition to the names of the zodiacal signs on the ecliptic circle. The tablet of horizons (*safihah al-afaqiyah*) and the measures on the 'ankabūt (*safihah mizān al-ankabūt*) are engraved, one on each side of a tablet. Other tablets contain projections of parallels of altitudes (*almucanṣarāts*) for altitudes 12, 18, 22, 24, 27 and 29 degrees as also the tropics, the equator, temporal hour lines, the longest day measures for the latitude etc. The *almucantarats* are drawn at intervals of 6 degrees, that is, the astrolabe is *sudsī* in nature.

Table 1 Longitudes and Latitudes of a few selected Places from Muhammad Maqims Astrolabe (No 40 420)

Place (al bilād)	Longitude (al tul) 0		Latitude (al arud) 0		Place (al bilād)	Longitude (al tul) 0		Latitude (al arud) 0	
Nisar	63	20	33	20	Samargand	99	36	39	37
Medina	75	20	25	0	Mashghar	106	30	44	0
Mecca	76	10*	21	40	Khotan	107	0	42	0
Damashq	70	0	33	15	Ghaznah	107	20	33	35
Halb (Aleppo)	72	10	33	50	Kābul	104	40	34	30
Maraghah	82	0	36	20	Qandhar	107	40	33	0
Tebriz	82	0	38	0	Multān	107	35	25	40
Kufa	70	30	31	30	Lahaur (Lahore)	109	20	31	50
Baghdad	80	0	33	25	Qatauf	115	50	20	25
Busrah	84	0	30	11	Banarasi	117	20	26	15
Shiraz	88	0	20	36	Kashmir	108	0	35	0
Isfahan	86	40	32	25	Delhi	114	18	28	30
Herat	94	20	34	30	Agrah	114	0	27	43
Marv	97	0	37	40	Jaunpur	119	6	26	36
Balkh	101	0	36	41	Ajmir	112	0	26	0
Bukhara	97	30	39	50	Ahmedabad	108	10	23	15

*This is obviously wrongly engraved, other Muqim astrolabes examined by Shri S N Sen give the longitude as 77° 10' in general agreement.

Muhammad Muqim ibn 'Isab ibn al-Haddad usturlabī Humayunī
Lahori's Astrolabe (A H 1047, A D 1637) ⁴¹

It is a plane astrolabe made of brass and inscribed in Naskhī characters. It consists of the mother or mater (*umm*) of dia 20.6 cm the spider ('ankabūt) of dia 18.9 cm. The dioptra (*al-idade*) is 18.7 cm long. The rim of the mother is graduated in 360 degrees and is marked at the intervals of 5 degrees. The ventor is divided into four annular spaces, each further subdivided into three rings. Within these rings are engraved the places names and their latitudes and longitudes. The back (*zakar*) is divided into four quadrants. The rim of the upper two quadrants each is divided into 90 degrees from the horizontal to the vertical line and marked at the intervals of 5 degrees. The upper left is for the sine table and the upper right is engraved with declination circles. The two lower quadrants contain graduations at the rim and a rectangular scale for measuring shadows in feet (*zill-i-aqdam*), and shadows in digits (*zill-i-asab'a*).

Within the rectangular scale are engraved six semi-circular rings containing the names of 28 lunar mansions, 12 signs of the zodiac and table of Hudud with their decans and Lords. The 'ankabut is engraved with 37 star names in addition to the ecliptic with the names of the 12 zodiacal signs. Of the five discs, one is engraved on one side with the projections of the horizons and the other side with the measures on the 'ankabut to enable determination of the longitudes and latitudes of the 'ankabut stars. The remaining four tablets are engraved with a *almucantarats* at intervals of two degrees (*nisfi*) for different latitudes, the two tropics, the equator, the temporal lines and the extent of the longest day in hours and minutes for the corresponding latitudes. The workmanship is excellent.

Table II. Stars in the Rate of one of Muqini's Astrolabe (Regl. No 40. 421).

Transliteration (Name of the star on the Astrolabe)	Modern name	On the Astrolabe		Ulugh Beg's values		Long diff	
		Long	Lat	Long	Lat		
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	
Sadar qitus	80 Ceti	29 — 26	26	43 — 23	51	2	17
Khadib	11 Cassio	32 51	24	1 50	48	3	59
fum qitus	peac	34 — 12	32	10 — 12	18	1	50
tali musafa	34	50 33	46	40 — 33	35	3	20
an nahar	Indani						
ghul	26 Persei	52 21	14	55 22	0	3	03
	Algol						
dabaran	87 Tauri	05 — 6	62	31 — 5	15	2	29
	Aldebaran						
nji jauza isri	19 Orionis	71 — 32	69	25 — 31	14	1	33
	Rigel						
yad isri	Orionis	77 — 17	73	34 — 17	15	3	26
alyun	13 Aurigae	78 22	74	43 22	42	3	17
	Capella						
nji yumni	53 Orionis	80 — 33	78	40 — 33	21	1	20
yad yumni	Betelgeux	82 — 17	81	13 — 16	45	0	47
abur	9 Canis	99 — 40	96	19 — 39	30	2	41
	Majoris,						
	Sirius						
fard shuja	31 Hydrae	142 — 23	139	31 — 23	30	2	29
zahr asad	68 Leonis	157 — 14	153	29 — 14	0	3	82
Janah ghurab	4 Corvi	187 — 14	182	16 — 14	18	2	14
qa'da batih		169 — 21	165	0 — 22	42	2	03
Simak	Alnasr	208 57	206	57 — 55	56	5	28
ramih	Arcturus						
Simak eazal	67 Virgini-	109 — 2	100	10 — 2	0	3	80
	is spica						
miza fakkah	5 Cor Bore-	216 43	214	34 44	30	1	26
(munur)	216 ealis,						
	Alpiceca						
'unq harya	27 Serpenti-	226 26	224	24 26	30	1	32
Waqi	3 Lurnae	232 03	228	19 03	0	3	41
	Vega						
tate	54 Aquilae	207 20	204	10 20	15	2	50
	Altair						
dhanab aljad	40 Capri-	317 — 2	314	13 — 2	30	2	47
	corni						
fum faras	8 Pegasi	330 22	324	28 22	0	5	82
saqsakib	70 Aquarii	334 — 8	331	55 — 8	18	2	05
mankib	53 Pegasi	355 29	351	37 30	51	3	23
dhanab qitus	16 Ceti	358 — 21	355	25 — 22	0	2	85

(F) *Astrolabes of the Rampur Raja Library, Rampur*⁴²

There are two brass Astrolabes which belonged to the type of *astrolabium planispherum* or the flat astrolabe type called in Arabic as *Dhatu'l-Safa'ih* (consisting of tablets)

*Sarra's Astrolabe, Dated 615 A D i.e., 1204 A D*⁴³

It was constructed by Sarra at Dimishq (Damascus) Pandit Pandamaker Dube^{43a} holds that "of all the Astrolabes that have been worked out as yet, this is most probably the oldest one"

It is a flat brass astrolabe incised in Arabic Kuffic characters and numerals. Its mater is of 5.4 inches in diameter and 6 mm in thickness. Its mater has a circular raised edge or rim into which fits the *ankabut* and the tablets. This circular edge is graduated in degrees, which are numbered in groups of 10 upto 100 and similarly further starting from the top or south point of the instrument and proceeding through the west point on the right, the north and east in order the numerals are engraved in *Abjad nakshi* notation.

The total nos. of the degrees in a circle is marked by 300 degrees. Each group of 10 is also divided into 10 divisions and every 5th division is numbered five. The inner part of the mater is marked by the engravings with a list of cities together with their longitudes and latitudes. It is also marked with stereographical projections of the horizon, *almucantarats* or circles of altitude azimuth, temporal or unequal and equal or equinoctial hours circles for the latitudes of 24° and equator and tropics of Cancer and Capricorn. As there is one *almucantarāt* for every 6° of altitude, the instrument is *Sudsi* or *Sextant*. The (12) twelve unequal or temporal hour lines divide the time into (12) twelve equal portions and these portions of time vary in length from 1/12 of the longest day to 1/12 of the shortest. Hence they are termed unequal or temporary or planetary hour lines or circles. The back of the astrolabe has the whole of the periphery, graduated in degrees in groups of 10 upto 90 in each quadrant, starting from the East as well as from the West points to the South and North. Below the graduated edge there are three concentric circles, which, having for their centre, the centre of the disc, are graduated in degrees and marked by the names of the lunar mansions, the names of the signs of zodiacs, and the name of (12) twelve months. The lower part and central rectangle of the instrument consist of *Shadow Scales*. The *Alidade* or *sighter* has near to each end one fixed sighting piece with one sighting hole and is fixed on the centre pin and revolves round the centre on the back of the Astrolabe. It is not divided into any division. The *ankabut* disc

of the astrolabe has an ecliptic circle graduated in degrees, and numbered in groups of six with the signs of zodiacs, standing from the east and proceeding counter-clock-wise. It is marked by the (26) twenty six star names. The Astrolabe has four tablets each 4 7" in diameter and about 1 mm in thickness and marked by the tropics, equator horizons and longitudes and latitudes of places.

Zia-uddin's Astrolabe dated 1074 A H i e, 1663 A D⁴⁴

This astrolabe is of 5 1" inches in diameter and 3" inches in thickness. Its body has a circular raised edge or rim which fitted the ankabut and tablets. The tablets are five in number. The rim or the circular raised edge is graduated in degrees numbered in groups of 5 upto 360°. The venter is inscribed with the names of 77 cities together with their longitude and latitudes. The back of the instrument at the upper half of the periphery, is graduated into degrees in the groups of 5 upto 90. The Southeast quadrant consists of a graphic table of Sines. The vertical radius is divided into (60) sixty equal parts and the lines parallel to the other radius are drawn to the circumference from each point of the division. The Southwest quadrant exhibits some kind of an yearly calendar depicting the names of the signs of the zodiac six on the horizontal radius and six on the vertical radius (divisible into 6 equal parts with sub-divisions of 36° each). The division of the Southwest quadrant together with the graduated circumference marks the graphs showing relation between the sun's light ascension and meridian altitudes for latitudes 27°, 29° and 32°. The central rectangle consists of a square and circular shadow scales over it. It is inscribed that it was constructed by Zia 'uu'ddin's son of Mohammad, son of Mullah Isha, son of Seikh in 1074 A H i e, 1663 A. D. The Alidade is fixed on the centre pin. Its graduated edge lies on a diameter of the circle. Half of its edge is divided into (60) sixty equal divisions, every fifty division being numbered. The left upper edge is divided into (6) six equal divisions, corresponding to the division for the signs of zodiac. It has also a fixed sighting piece, each having two holes. The ankabut of the astrolabe has an ecliptic circles graduated into degrees and numbered in groups of six with the signs of zodiac's, and the names of 44 stars with their latitudes which corresponded very closely to the Ulugh Beg's star catalogue. Three star names are quite illegible. The Astrolabe has five brass tablets each having 4 6" inches in diameter and 1 mm in thickness. They marked latitudes, hours, horizons city names (77 in number) etc. An astrolabe by the same maker and date was exhibited at the Persian Art Education held at London in 1921 and reported in its catalogue.

(G) 'Astrolabes in the Library of Nawab Sir Salar Jung Bahadur,⁴⁵ Hyderabad.

Two Astrolabes has been reported by Nadavi, one belonged to Master Allah-Dad, the astrolabe maker of Lahore, dated 975 A H and the other one was constructed by Ziauddin Muhammad and dated 1064 A H The details of these two instruments are now not yet available

(H) *An Astrolabes of the Oriental Library, Bankipur,⁴⁶ Patna*

It is reported by Nadvi It is very big in size and dated 1074 A.H It bears the following legend "The work of the humblest creature Zia'uddin Muhammad, son of Qaim Mohammad, son of Mulla 'Isa, son of Sheyakh Allah-Dad, Astrolabi, Hūmayunī, Lahori, dated 1074 A H "

Nadvi holds that this astrolabe belonged to an instrument maker of Lahore Genealogically, Ziauddin's grandfather was Mulla 'Isa whose father was shekyh Allah Dad It is held that the instrument maker must have flourished in the reign of Humayun The details of this astrolabe are not yet available

(I) *Astrolabes in Nadwatul Ulama Library, Lucknow⁴⁷*

Nadvi⁴⁸ reported that an Astrolabe of dated 1059 A H by Ziauddin Muhammad has been preserved in the Nadwatul Ulma Library, Lucknow The legend runs as follows "The work of Ziauddin Muhammad, son of Qaim Muhammad, son of Mulla' Isa, son of Sheykh Allah-Dad Hūmayunī Astrolabi, Lahori, 1059 A H " It was Humayun who designed an Humayunī Astrolabe which were then vogue in India and later on named after him According to Nadvi,⁴⁹ these Astrolabe are known as "Humayun's Astrolabe" The two broken Astrolabes of the high quality made of brass are also preserved in the Museum^{49a}

(J) *Astrolabes in the Bharat Kala Bhavan, Varanasi⁵⁰*

- 1 Mohd Mehudi Asphahanī's Astrolabe, A H 1071, A D 1660⁵¹

It is dedicated to Mohd Badi, son of Khusru Sultan son of Nasar Mohammad Khan, ruler of Balkh

- 2 An unnamed, undated Astrolabe⁵²

It is supposed to have been manufactured in the late 18th or early 19th centuries It has 17.5 cm height, 13 cm width and it is rectangular in shape It is engraved in Nagari letters having cross bar indicators It listed the

names of stars, etc sign of zodiacs, longitudes and latitudes of the number of places, etc

3 *An unnamed, undated Astrolabes*⁵³

It belongs to about late 18th Century Its top plate is missing It is a bronze Astrolabe with no Inscriptions over it except the names of stars etc in Nagari characters It has cross indicators also

(K) *An Astrolabe in the Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute,*⁵⁴ *Poona*

An Astrolabe of Samvat 1695 i.e., 1830 A D was constructed by Yantra Raj Harnath of Varanasi It is engraved in Devanagari Script with numerals The diameter is 16 cm. On the surface of the Astrolabe there are figures which are in the multiplex of six each such as 6, 12, 18 etc upto 360 On the rotating disc the names of twelve Rāsies (i.e. zodiacs) are mentioned Inside the Astrolabe, there are ten different plates The names of cities like Varanasi, Gwalior, Delhi, Samarkhand etc with their different longitudinal and latitudinal positions are mentioned in it

(2) *Astrolabes in the Private Collections*⁵⁵

(A) *In the private collection of Qazi Obeid'ul Bari of Calcutta* *An Astrolabe of Qaim Mohammad dated 1034 A H*⁵⁶ i.e.,

Nadvi reported that Qazi Obeidul belonged to an old family of Calcutta Professor Nadvi gathered the information relating to an Astrolabe by Qaim Muhammad of dated 1034 A H which belonged to Qazi Obeidul Bari The astrolabe bears the following legend "The work of Qaim Muhammad son of Isa, son of Allah-Dad, Astrolabi, Humayuni, 1034 A H On the other corner of this astrolabe is written the 21st years of Jahangir's succession" The particulars of the instruments are not yet available

*In the Private collection of Abu Baker of Aligarah Muslim University*⁵⁷

It is reported by Nadvi that an astrolabe of dated 1074 A D is deposited in the Aligarah Muslim University It is constructed by Ziauddin Muhammad, son of Qaim Muhammad, son of Mulla Isa, son of Sheykh Allah-Dad, Astrolabi Humayuni, Lahori The details of this instrument are not yet available

(B) *In the Private Collection of Mr J B Petit, (described by late M P Khareghat) — Astrolabe (A H 1070)*⁵⁸

It is a plane astrolabe made of brass and inscribed in Naskhi characters The mother or mater is 12.8 cm in diameter, with a

raised rim graduated into 360 degrees marked at intervals of 5'. The ventor contains six concentric circles making two groups of three annular rings each. These are engraved with place names and their latitudes and longitudes. 57 place names are accommodated in these rings. The two upper quadrants of the back of the astrolabe are graduated at the rim into 90 degrees and marked at the intervals of 5 degrees from the horizontal line to the vertical. The upper left is engraved with horizontal lines for use as sine table. The upper right quadrant is engraved with declination circles. The two lower quadrants contain circular scales of shadows, the left one in feet and the right one in digits. Proceeding from the rim towards the centre, the circular scale is followed by five circles engraved with the names of 12 zodiacs, 28 lunar mansions, scale showing the division of each zodiac into three equal spaces, 10, 20 and 30, the decans and their lords and the *ardajans* and their lords. The centre of the lower half is engraved with rectangular shadow scale in feet and digits and with a table of *Hudud* (limit) which was of significance to astrologers. The spider or '*ankabūt*' has engraved on its indicators 42 star names i.e. 20 on the north and 22 on the south of the ecliptic. There are four brass tablets, of which one contains the projection of horizons on one side and measures on the '*ankabūt*' on the other. The three other tablets contains the projections of the altitudes (*ulmucanjarāts*), the two tropics, the equator, the hour circles etc for latitudes of Mecca, 25°, 30°, 32°, 34°, and 37° and the corresponding longest day in hour and minutes. The diopetre is 11.35 cm long.

The foregoing account reveals the following

- 1 That brass is the material which is applied in almost all kinds of Astrolabes
- 2 That there is no uniformity with regard to the diameter of the mater, the diameter of the *ankabut* and the thickness of the Astrolabes
- 3 That these astrolabes marked a distinctive typological uniformity within themselves
- 4 That some of the astrolabes are inscribed in the Arabi Kufic or Naṣḥī characters with abjad numerals, while others are inscribed in the Devanagari Script and numerals
- 5 That some of the Astrolabes are dated without makers name, some are undated without makers name, while some others are both dated with the maker's name
- 6 That the details of their construction are available in some cases while only few of them are simply reported by the historians. Their details are not yet available

- 7 That these Astrolabes refers to different longitude and latitude of cities, star names, signs of zodiacs, names of days, weeks and months etc
- 8 That the astrolabe making in India could be traced out from the advent of Arabs in India and the tradition continued in the preceeding centuries down to the 19th centuries

Few stray notices of astrolabes would also be found in the journals of the Asiatic Society of Bengal right from 1839 onwards down to the 1890, but it is a regretting fact that these astrolabes have not been actually been traced out. Even as early as in 1839⁵⁹ it is reported that Raja Ram Singh of Kota presented an astrolabe to the Government of India and further in 1890,⁶⁰ two astrolabes were purchased by M C Narayanratna of Allahabad for the Asiatic Society. But unfortunately the traces of these astrolabes are not yet available. We have already noticed that the tradition of Astrolabe making developed from Lahore and sprang at the different centres like Jaipur, Varanasi, Kota and Patna. Even Punjab too was an important centre. The evidence on record shows that the Maharaja of Kapurtala patronized⁶¹ the art of Astrolabe making even as late as in the early 19th centuries. Two kinds of his astrolabes — one with a small hand type and an other a pedestal stand type earned the credit for their selection as a rare exhibit which were exhibited in the exhibition of 1864 and reported by Baden Powell in 1872.⁶¹

The systematic study of these astrolabes in a historical perspective would be highly profitable in tracing out the gradual evolution of the technique of Astrolabe making in India right from twelfth century onwards down to the early nineteenth century. But the task is not so easy as it amounts to a thorough and minute study of these astrolabes which is very complicated in nature. The study of these historical astrolabes would be more meaningful and purposeful to a historian of science if the entire problem can be reviewed from the following angles —

- (a) That whether the signatures of the astrolabe makers or any kind of seal engraved on it is actually authentic or not? Is there any room of forgery, duplicating or copying out an astrolabe previously devised?
- (b) That did any institution or school of traditional craft of Astrolabe making ever existed in India? If so who were the pioneers? Where those centres were located and what was their actual nature?
- (c) That whether the Indian Astrolabes constructed by the same maker differs with their counterparts found in the different parts of Europe, Middle East and Islamic Coun-

REFERENCES

- 1 E B, I, 13th Edn, p 793
- 2 Smith, D E. History of Mathematics, Vol II, Dover, New York, 1958 pp 344-345
- 2a. Price Derek, J Precision Instruments to 1500 *A History of Technology* ed. Charles Singer et al. III, 1957, 582-619
- Neugbauer, O The Early History of Astrolabe *ISIS*, XXXX 240-256, 1949.
- The first full fledged work on astrolabe is done by Philoponus and Sebokht.
- Gunther, R T The Astrolabes of the World, 2 Vols, Oxford, 1932, an English translation by M H. Green is given on p 61-81. A French translation was made by Paul Tannery, with critical notes *Mem Sci* IV, 241-260. For German translation, see Drecker, J 'Des Johannes Philoponos Schrift uber das Astrolabe *ISIS*, XI, 15-44, 1928
- Nau, F N Le traite Sur L'astrolabe plan de seveire Sabokht *J A* XIII, 238-303, 1899, for English see Gunther The Astrolabes of the World pp 82-103
- 3 Dickenson, R E. and Howarth, O J R making of Geography, Oxford, 1933, p 108
- 4 Ahmad, N "Muslim Contribution to Astronomical and Mathematical Geography" *IC*, XVIII, 1944, p 180, see also Sachau's (ed) *Al-Beruni India*, p 12
- 5 Sachau, E. *Al-Beruni India*, p 12
- 6 Sartori, G Introduction to the History of Science, II, p 12
- 7 Al-Beruni's *Ar Risala fi sanat ustrulab*, MSS No 1481, Asiatic Society of Bengal Collection, Asiatic Society, Calcutta
- 8 Ahmad, N *Op cit*, p 180
- 9 Schoy, C Geography of the Muslim and the middle Ages, *AGR* XIV, 1924 see S M Nadvi-Dia-uddin Humayuni *ustrulab*, *Madris*, August 1933 see also Ahmad N Muslim contribution to Geography, *JMGA*, XIV, No IV, 1939
- 9a. For the general typological features see Nallino *EI*, I see also Kiely, Edmond, R Surveying Instruments—their history and classroom use, Columbia University, New York 1947, pp 64-86 150-164
- 10 For the description of the Instruments the information is acknowledged from the kind courtesy of Shri V Govind and Shri S N Sen's work on 'Inventory of Scientific Instruments of Historical Importance in India' (unpublished), *INSA*, 1975, Calcutta
- 11 Registration No 56, 155/7
- 12 Registration No 56 155/5
- 13 Registration No 56, 155/2 (C)
- 14 Registration No 56 155/3
- 15 Registration No 56, 155/2 (B)
- 16 Registration No 55, 155/2 (A)
- 17 Registration No 56, 98/A
- 18 Kaye, G R The Astronomical observatory of Jai Singh, *A.S.J* (NIS) XL, Calcutta 1918
- 19 Registration No Kaye—M.
- 20 Reg No Kaye—I
- 21 Reg No Kaye—H
- 22 Reg No Kaye—G
- 23 Reg No Kaye—D
- 24 Reg No Kaye—E
- 25 Reg No Kaye—B
- 26 Reg No Kaye—A
- 27 Information from the kind courtesy of the Director, Indian Museum Calcutta
- 28 Reg No A 24432
- 29 Reg No A 24431
- 30 Kapadia, D D (Ed) M P Kharaghat Memorial Volume, Volume II, Astrolabes, Bombay 1950, see also Rehatsek, E. The Labours of the Arab Astronomers and their Instruments with discription of an Astrolabe in the Mulla Feroz Library *JBBRA.S*, XI 1875 pp 311-330, (9 lithographed diagrams)
- 32 *Ibid*
- 33 Kaye, G R Astronomical Instrument in the Delhi Museum *M.A.S.J*, XII, 1921, pp 16-19, For the registration number and the other details the information is acknowledged from the kind courtesy of the Director General Archaeology of India New Delhi (See also Bose D M Sen S N and Subbarayappa B V (ed) A Concise Book of History of Science, 1971, Delhi, p 131

- 34 Reg No 40, 414
 - 35 Reg No 40, 415
 - 36 Reg No 40 413
 - 37 Reg No 40, 412.
 - 38 Reg No 40 418
 - 39 Reg No 40 417
 - 40 Reg No 40 420 For table I see also Sen S N The Astrolabe The Scientific Instrument par Excellence of the Medieval Times Summer School on History of Science 2 11 Sept Proceedings 1974 INSA New Delhi p 211 (Cyclostyled)
 - 41 Reg No 40, 421 For table II see also Sen S N. *op cit* p 218 219
 - 42 Dube Padmakara Astrolabes in the State Library Rampur JUPHS IV Pt I Oct. 1923 pp 1-11 Pls 1-11
 - 43 *Ibid* pp 1 6
 - 43a *Ibid* p 1
 - 44 *Ibid* pp 6 10 see also A Catalogue of Persian Art Exhibition London 1931 p. 193
 - 45 Nadvi S S Some Indian Astrolabe Makers IC IX 1935 pp 627-628
 - 46 *Ibid*, pp 630 631
 - 47 *Ibid*, p 628
 - 48 *Ibid*
 - 49 See Nadvi's article in Al Nadwa March 1909 p 24
 - 49a Information from the kind courtesy of Mr Salman Shamsi of the Library Nadwatul, Lucknow (Three Astrolabes are deposited there)
 - 50 Information from the kind courtesy of the Hon Director Bharat Kala Bhavan,
 - 51 Acc No 3/5879 See also Padshah Nama of Mulla Abdul Hamid Lahori 1065 A H Vol II p 165 Asiatic Society of Bengal, 1868 see also EB I 11th edn (facing plate)
 - 52 Acc No 3/9490
 - 53 Acc No 2/5133
 - 54 Information from the kind courtesy of Dr G K Bhat, Curator Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute Poona See also Kapadia D D *op cit*
 - 55 Nadavi S S Some Indian Astrolabe Makers IC IX, 1935 p 627
 - 56 *Ibid* p 628
 - 57 Kapadia D D *Op cit*
 - 58 JASB XI p 759 777 1841
JASB VIII p 831 838 1839
JASB Proceeding pp 148 149 1890
 - 59 JASB VIII p 831-883 1839
 - 60 JASB Proc p 148 149 1890
 - 61 Powell Baden Manufacture and Arts of Punjab Vol II pp 259 263 Punjab Printing Co 1872.
-

A DISCUSSION OF THE EARLY NYĀYA-VAIŚE- SIKAS ON THE NATURE OF ĪŚVARA

By

GEORGE CHEMPARATHY

The acceptance of Īsvara into the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika system brought with it the necessity of determining what he really was. Since every reality was classified under one or the other of the categories and their sub-divisions admitted by the system, it was necessary to determine precisely the class of reality under which Īsvara had to be grouped. In the early period of the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika theism there seems to have been a difference of opinion as to the class of beings under which Īsvara was to be grouped, though the discussion on this point was, as the texts of the later authors of the system show, only of transitory importance in the general development of its theism.

The materials at our disposal on this discussion are very meagre, consisting of a few short passages, some of them apparently incidental, found in some Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika works as well as in the Buddhist work *Tattvasaṃgrahapañjikā*¹

The earliest text wherein we are made aware of the problem in question is the *Nyayabhāṣyam* of Pakṣilasvāmīn (probably in the first half of the fifth century A D). After commenting on the *Nyāyasūtras* IV, 1, 19-21 dealing with Īsvara as the cause of the universe, Pakṣilasvāmīn gives us an excursus, rich in content though short, on the nature and qualities of Īsvara. "The Īsvara is another soul (*ātmāntaram*)", observes he, "characterized by [special] qualities. It is not possible that he is of the nature of anything other than the nature of the soul. Īsvara is another soul characterized by the absence of demerit, erroneous cognition [and]

1 The editions of these works used for this article are the following —

Nyāyabhāṣyam [abbr NBh.] and *Nyayavarttikam* [abbr NV] *Nyayadarśanam* With *Vatsyayana's Bhāṣya* Uddyotakara's *Varttika* crit ed with notes by Amarendramohan Tarkaturtha and Hemantakumar Tarkaturtha Vol II (Calcutta Sanskrit Series No XXIX), Calcutta 1944

Nyayamanjari [abbr NM] *The Nyayamanjari of Jayanta Bhaṭṭa* ed by Pt Surya Narayana Sukla (Kashī Sanskrit Series No 106), Benares 1936

Nyayakandali [abbr NKand] *Prasastapadabhāṣya* with commentary *Nyayakandali* of Śrīdhara Bhaṭṭa (Ganganatha-Jha-Granthamala Vol. 1), Varanasi 1963

Tattvasaṃgrahapañjikā [abbr TSP] *Tattvasaṅgraha* of Acarya Shantaraksita with the commentary *Pañjika* of Shri Kamalashila crit ed by Swami Dwarikadas Shastri Vol I (Bauddha Bharat Series—1), Varanasi 1963

the next work of the Nyāya-school that has come down to us affords us the material to infer what this other view was

In the course of his excursus on Īsvara, Uddyotakara speaks also of the nature of Īsvara

'Since his nature has not been accurately determined, there is doubt whether Īsvara is a substance or one of the other categories such as (lit 'beginning with') quality [We say Īsvara is] a substance, because he possesses the quality of cognition, like other substances. If [he is a substance] because of his possessing cognition, is he then another soul (*ātmāntaram*)? [We answer He is] not another soul because of the difference of qualities. For just as earth etc are not souls (i.e. are different from souls) on account of the difference of their qualities, in the same manner is Īsvara possessed of qualities that are different [from those of other souls], consequently he too is not another soul. What then is his difference [from other souls]? Some indeed say that there is in him excellence of merit, cognition, dispassionateness and omnipotence [With the word] 'excellence (*atīśayah*) [is meant] eternity. We however, do not recognize this, [for] though there is proof for Īsvara's being possessed of cognition, there is not likewise a proof for the eternity of merit etc [in him]. And what is without proof cannot be accepted. But the excellence [of Īsvara consists in] the eternity of cognition, [and this is] the difference of quality [on account of which he is not another soul]. For in him are eternal cognition and the [five] generic qualities beginning with number. Īsvara has fix qualities, like ether'⁵

In this passage we have the problem of the nature of Īsvara posed very clearly. Uddyotakara argues, first of all, that, of the six categories of reality—as far as we know, the seventh category called *abhāvaḥ* was not explicitly mentioned at this time as a distinct category—Īsvara could be classed only under the category of substance (*dravyam*), for he possesses the quality of cognition which, in as far as it is a quality, can belong only to a substance, and not to any other of the categories. The more important problem, however, was whether he could be classed among the substances that were accepted by the system. A glance at the list of the nine kinds of substances admitted by the system shows that, if Īsvara were to be classed under any of them it could only be under the class of soul (*ātma*), for soul alone, among the substances possesses the quality of cognition. Uddyotakara, however, denies that Īsvara is another soul. The statement that Īsvara is not another soul (*na ātmāntaram*) can be understood in two senses either that Īsvara, though

belonging to the class of soul, is not like the other (namely, ordinary) souls, or that he does not at all belong to the class of souls. If Uddyotakara understands it in the first sense, he does not disagree with his precursor Pakṣilasvāmin. If, on the contrary, he takes it in the second sense, he follows a view quite different from that of the Bhāṣyakāra.

A study of the passage of Uddyotakara makes it clear that he does not follow the view of the author of the Nyāyabhāṣyam. For while Pakṣilasvāmin states clearly that Īśvara is another soul (ātmāntaram) characterized by special qualities, Uddyotakara explicitly denies that he is another soul (*na ātmāntaram*).⁶ That the difference of Īśvara from the other souls as understood by the author of the Nyāyavārttikam is of a far higher degree than that as understood by his precursor is clear especially from his explanation why Īśvara is not another soul. He observes that, just as earth etc.⁷ differ from souls through the difference of their qualities, so also Īśvara must be different from the other souls on account of the fact that he is endowed with qualities different from theirs. This comparison leaves no doubt that, in the opinion of the author, Īśvara could not belong to the same class as the souls. For earth, fire, water etc. differ from each other and from souls through the difference of their qualities and form different classes of substances. In the same way, Īśvara must be conceived as different from the souls and as another kind of substance on account of the difference of his qualities from those of the souls. Even though Uddyotakara himself does not explicitly speak of Īśvara as "another substance" (*dravyantaram*), his explanation of the difference of Īśvara from the other souls logically leads to such a conclusion.

Uddyotakara further discusses what difference it is that makes Īśvara different from the ordinary souls. He rejects the view of those who maintain that this difference consists in Īśvara possessing eternal merit, cognition, dispassionateness and omnipotence,⁸ for though there is proof for Īśvara's possessing cognition, there is no proof that he possesses merit etc. In the view of Uddyotakara Īśvara possesses only six qualities: the five generic qualities of number, dimension, individuality, conjunction and disjunction as well

6 Ibid 951 3 *nātmāntaram* *gunabheda*

7 With 'earth etc.' are meant the eight substances other than soul namely earth, water, fire, wind, ether, time, space and Manas.

8 In all probability Uddyotakara here rejects the views of Pakṣilasvāmin who had remarked *dharmajñānasamādhisampada ca vasiṣṭham ātmāntaram* *īśvarah*. The substitution of the terms *vairāgyam* and *austāryam* by *samādhi* need not hinder us from ascribing this view to Pakṣilasvāmin especially since he admits *īśvara aṣṭavidham alīkaryam* (NBh 944 2).

as the specific quality of cognition.⁹ No doubt the fact that Īśvara does not possess the qualities of merit (*dharma*) and demerit (*adharma*) marks him off from the other souls. For due to the absence of these two qualities he is absolutely free from the law of Karma that determines the mode of existence of the ordinary souls. As Uddyotakara himself later on remarks, Īśvara is neither 'bound' (*baddha*) to Samsāra nor 'liberated' (*mukta*) from it,¹⁰ but the other souls inevitably belong to either of these two groups. Nevertheless in his view what distinguishes and differentiates Īśvara from the other souls is not the absence of merit and demerit in him, but the eternal nature of his cognition. He proves the eternity of Īśvara's cognition from the fact that it is not determined or limited to any individual object and that Īśvara cognizes at the same time several things, as is proved by the origination of several things simultaneously. Moreover, the cognition of Īśvara comprises objects that are past, future and present, and has the nature of direct perception, not of inference or of verbal testimony. In short, his cognition is eternal, all-embracing and one. The cognition of the ordinary souls, on the other hand, is produced, limited to particular objects and successive or many. Thus the special characteristics of his cognition, all of which flow from its eternal nature, make Īśvara different from the ordinary souls.

It is in the Nyāyavārttikam that we come across for the first time the idea that Īśvara does not belong to the class of soul, but is a different substance. It is, however, not improbable that it had been proposed even before Uddyotakara. As we suggested earlier, it may have been current even at the time of Pakṣilasvāmin, and Uddyotakara may have merely taken sides with a view that was already existing. We do not know the name of any other Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika author, either before or after Uddyotakara, who held such a theory. There are, however, references in the later philosophical literature to the two different views on the nature of Īśvara.

For example, Kamalasīla, the Buddhist commentator who lived in the second half of the eighth century A D, while introducing the discussion of the Īśvara doctrine of the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣikas, writes as follows "Some [Nyāyikas etc maintain] that the omniscient Īśvara, the creator of the entire universe is only another soul characterized by [special] qualities. Others, [on the other hand, say] that, on account of his being possessed of different qualities, he is indeed another substance, distinct from the souls, endowed as he is

⁹ In NV 952 13-14, however Uddyotakara also recognizes *icchā* in Īśvara. Similarly we see him ascribing also *anubhavam* to Īśvara in NV 950, 17. It is difficult to see two qualities in Īśvara and yet the qualities of Īśvara. A probable he considered these two qualities as *svā*

¹⁰ Cf NV 952, 15-16.

with a cognition that is eternal, one and having all things for its object"¹¹

A comparison of the two views mentioned by Kamalaśīla with those we have come across in the Nyāyabhāṣyam and the Nyāyavārttikam shows that the Buddhist commentator here refers to the views respectively of Pakṣilasvāmin and Uddyotakara. Interesting to note is also the striking resemblance of ideas and even of terms found in the second view with those found in the Nyāyavārttikam,¹² a fact which confirms our supposition that Kamalaśīla there refers to the view maintained by Uddyotakara. Moreover, while the author of the Nyāyavārttikam did not explicitly declare Īśvara to be "another substance" (*dravyāntaram*), we have in the passage of Kamalaśīla this term applied to Īśvara and connected with the view which, we believe, was the view held by Uddyotakara.

Also in the works of Nyaya-Vaiśeṣika authors we have hints or references which suggest that there was difference of opinions regarding the nature of Īśvara. Jayantaphaṭṭa, the author of the Nyāyamañjarī, (about the second half of the ninth century A D), concludes his brief discussion on the qualities of Īśvara as follows 'Thus five of the nine qualities of the soul, [namely] cognition, pleasure, desire, effort [and] merit are [found] in Īśvara, on the other hand, four [qualities of the soul, namely] pain aversion, demerit [and] impressions are not [found in him], and hence Īśvara is only a special soul, not another substance"¹³ In this passage the author points out in very clear terms how he conceives of Īśvara's nature. Īśvara is not like the ordinary souls, and yet he does not belong to a class different from the class of souls, he is rather a special soul (*atma viśeṣaḥ*). He further clearly denies that Īśvara is another substance (*na dravyāntaram*). When we keep in mind that Jayanta often refers to the views of the ancient thinkers of the school,¹⁴ we can conclude that, in refuting the view that Īśvara is another sub-

11 TSP 51 17-20 *tatra viśiṣṭagunam atmāntaram eva sarvasya jagataḥ kartaram sarvajnam īśvaram iti keci. atmavārttikam nityaikasarvārthavaiśyabuddhigupatāyā dharmagatavācā dravyāntaram ity apare* The term *karit* (TSP 51 18) though found in the two available editions of the work does not seem to me correct. I suggest the reading *jagataḥ kartaram sarvajnam*.

12 ... of TSP 51 18 19 corresponds. Similarly the term *nityai-* though not as one word in *Thus nityabuddhiḥ* can be NV 951 7 8 952 11-12) 952 9 10 *sa ca buddhiḥ* is said that Īśvara's cog-

13 ... *pratyakṣādharmaḥ santisvare catvāraḥ tu dukkḥādvēśādharmasamākārā na santity atma viśeṣa eśvaro na dravyāntaram.*

14 Brahmananda Gupta has shown this with regard to the doctrine of perception according to the NM in his excellent study *Die Wahrnehmungslehre in der Nyayamañjarī* Bonn 1962. See especially pp 24 25 94ff.

stance, he had in mind either Uddyotakara himself or those who followed the same views as his, since no Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika thinker of his time is known to have held such a view

We would like to mention here one more author who in all probability refers to the same discussion on the nature of Īsvara. Commenting on the passage in the Padārthadharmaśaṅgraha wherein Prasastapāda says that there are only nine substances, Śrīdhara, the author of the Nyāyakandali, (about the second half of the tenth century A D), explains that there are only nine substances since the omniscient great sage—meant is the Vaiśeṣikasūtrakāra—who was intent on instructing men in all things did not mention any substance other than the nine mentioned,¹⁵ and that the word 'only' (*eva*) in the expression 'only nine substances' (*dravyāṇi navaveti*) used by Prasastapāda¹⁶ is not without a purpose, since it excludes any doubt whether there are any substances other than the nine mentioned. After refuting the view of some who maintain that darkness (*tamas*) is another substance (*dravyantaram*),¹⁷ Śrīdhara remarks "Īsvara too is only a soul [i.e. belongs only to the class of 'soul'] since he possesses the quality of cognition but the subject of six qualities [i.e. Īsvara] does not differ from the subject of fourteen qualities [i.e. ordinary souls] through difference of qualities, [as some have maintained,] since [otherwise there would be a] deviation in the case of the liberated souls"¹⁸

As I have pointed out elsewhere,¹⁹ the first part of the above statement, namely that Īsvara is only a soul, is the view of Śrīdhara himself, while the second part contains a view that he wants to reject. A comparison of this second part of the statement with the view we found in the Nyayavārttikam shows that they agree in content. Moreover it is important to take into account the context in which the statement is made. Discussing how many substances there are according to the Vaiśeṣika system Śrīdhara states, following the orthodox view of the school, that there are only nine substances. After refuting the view that darkness (*tamas*) is an additional substance, he adds that Īsvara too is only a soul. He intends thereby to exclude a view according to which Īsvara was another substance, in fact a tenth substance. This circumstance combined with the fact that the view he rejects is found to correspond with the view we met with in the passage of the Nyayavārttikam leads

15 Cf. Vaiśeṣikasūtra I 1 4

16 Cf. NKand 20 4

17 Ibid 21 11 — 26 12

18 Ibid 26, 13-14 *īsvaro pi buddhigunavād ātmaiva na tu sadgūṇādhikarāṇaś caturdhasagūṇādhikarāṇād gūṇabhēdena bhūdyate multatmabhīr evabhīcarat.*

19 Cf. my article The Number of Qualities (*guṇa*) in Īsvara according to Śrīdhara. A Reconsideration in The Journal of the Ganganatha Jha Kendriya Sanskrit Vidyapeetha, Vol XXVII, Jan-April 1971 Parts I-2, pp 12 15

us to conclude that he refers here to the view of Uddyotakara (and others who held a similar view) To strengthen his argument that Īvara and ordinary souls cannot be said to belong to different classes of substances on account of difference of qualities, he further points out that the liberated souls no more possess the specific qualities like the ordinary souls in Saṃsāra, and yet they are considered to belong to the class of souls

The passages we have studied hitherto have shown that there were two different views concerning the nature of Īśvara, one holding that Īśvara belongs to the class of souls, the other maintaining that he is a substance forming a class by himself, a substance sui generis. However, the history of Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika theism shows that the second view did not find a wide acceptance and was soon given up. The references to it made by Kamalaśīla, Jayanta and Śrīdhara probably point more to an old view that had already been abandoned than to one that continued to be held during their own days, for otherwise we would have found more traces of this theory in the available literature of the school than is really the case. It is not difficult to see why the view of Īśvara as another substance did not find a wider circulation and was short lived, for the postulation of a tenth substance would have gone against one of the fundamental doctrines of the system and any unorthodox view was sure to meet with strong opposition and eventual rejection²⁰. The Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika authors, on the whole, maintained the first view that Īśvara was to be grouped under the class of substances called soul (ātma), though a certain distinction was made between him and the ordinary souls. Bhāsarvajña, for instance, conceived of souls as of two kinds: an inferior (apara) kind comprising the ordinary souls and the superior (para) soul which is none other than Īśvara himself²¹. In this same way, Udayana speaks of souls as of two kinds: those which are not Īśvara (aniśvara), namely the ordinary souls, and that which is Īśvara²². In distinguishing the souls in this manner these authors brought Īśvara under the class of soul without making him a separate substance and yet safeguarding his distinction from the ordinary souls.

Though the view that *Isvara* is a substance *sui generis* was only a short episode in the history of Nyaya Vaiśeṣika theism, it shows us that the accommodation of *Isvara* to a system that was originally non-theistic did not take place without difficulties.

20 We may here recall that a Vaisesika author Candramati (about the fifth century A D) proposed an unorthodox theory of ten padartha-s which too abandoned

21 by Swami Yogindrananda (Śaṅkar-
963 p 446 5 417 3

22
by Sasunatha Jha (Mithila Institute
1963 p 14 13 16

SOME HINDU SELF-UNDERSTANDINGS OF THE VEDAS AS ŚRUTI, APAURUṢEYA AND NITYA

By
ARVIND SHARMA

I

The Hindu religious tradition gives to its sacred scriptures, the Vedas, the characteristic appellations of *śruti*, *nitya* and *apauruṣeya*. The manner in which these appellations have been understood, however, seems to have varied. It is the purpose of this paper to detect these shifts in the senses in which the appellations have been understood by the Mīmāṃsakas, by Sayana (14th century A D), and by two modern scholars of Hinduism, Surendranath Dasgupta and T M P Mahadevan.

II

For the Mīmāṃsakas the triad of appellations constitutes a closed system. The Vedas are *nitya* because they are *apauruṣeya*; they are eternal because they are work of neither man nor God. They are not the work of God because the system of *purva mīmāṃsā* is atheistic. And the Vedas are not the work of any man because as Śābara Svāmī argues

unless a sect becomes extinct we always remember the author and the user of the technical terms current in the usages of that sect. This is the general rule. It is now clear that had the Vedas been created by any man and the rites depending on them been first performed by him then we should always have remembered the author. But our actual experience is quite contrary to this. We do not know of any author or originator of the Vedic rites and ceremonies, yet we have been performing them continually from the beginning. Hence it cannot be established by any direct proof that someone conceived the relationship between Vedic words and their meanings and introduced the Vedic rites of his own free will and thus was the creator of the Vedas.¹

¹ Haridas Bhattacharya ed., *The Cultural Heritage of India* Vol. IV (Calcutta: The Ramakrishna Mission Institute of Culture 1953) p. 153.

It might be argued that though authorless, yet the Vedas cannot be eternal because of the cyclical notion of time in Hinduism, as Udayana argued in his *Nyāyakusumāñjali*² But this objection overlooks the fact that for the Mīmāṃsakas "at no time was the world otherwise than it is now" (*na kadācit anīdṛṣam jagat*)³ The doctrine of creation and dissolution is not acknowledged by the Mīmāṃsakas, the "doctrine of creation and dissolution which is recognized by all other Hindu systems could not be acknowledged by Mīmāṃsā as it would have endangered the eternality of the Vedas Even God had to be dispensed with on this account"⁴

It is also clear then that the *śruti*, according to the Mīmāṃsakas, could only mean, when applied to the Vedas, in the light of Jaimini Sūtras I 1 27-32 "the traditional method of studying" the Vedas "which is getting them by heart" "by hearing them recited, by the preceptor",⁵ as the word *śruti* can apply to anything heard.⁶

Thus for the Mīmāṃsakas the Vedas are *nitya* because the world exists eternally and the tradition of Vedic studies has proceeded uninterrupted from time immemorial, they are *apauruṣeya* because no original author of the Vedas is identifiable, and they are *śruti* because the Vedas are transmitted orally

III

Sāyana, the famous commentator on the Vedas, was an *advaita-vedāntin*⁷ like his brother,⁸ and subscribed to the doctrine of Brahman and *syṣṭi* and *pralaya* Thus according to Sāyana, "Absence of human composition constitutes the *apauruṣeyatā* of a book, and as Brahman and not any human being is the cause of the Veda, it is *apauruṣeya*"⁹

But 'Brahman is the cause of everything' so the eternity of the Veda has to be so understood as not to contradict it According to the cosmogony of Advaita Vedānta, at the beginning of creation God first conceives (*ākāṣya*) the world as it was previously, then wills 'I shall do this', and then from that 'will' of God are produced the five subtle elements of ether, air, fire,

2 Ibid, p 154

3 T M P Mahadevan, *Outlines of Hinduism* (Bombay Chetana Ltd 1960) p 138

4 Surendranath Dasgupta *A History of Indian Philosophy* Vol I (Cambridge University Press 1957) p 404

5 Haridas Bhattacharyya, ed op cit, Vol I, p 182

6 See Panini III iii 94

7 K. Satchidananda Murty *Revelation and Reason in Advaita Vedānta* (New York Columbia University Press 1959)

8 See E B Cowell and A E Gough, trs *The Sarva darsana-samgraha* by Madhava Acharya (Varanasi, Chowkhamba Sanskrit Series Vol X, 1961)

9 K. Satchidananda Murty, op cit, p 49

water and earth in that order. Dissolution proceeds in the reverse order, the ether merging at the end. Thus while all other things are produced and destroyed in between creation and before final dissolution, generation of ether in its subtle aspect (*tanmātra*) inaugurates creation and its dissolution completes the cessation of the world. So it is prior to all things and the last of all things, barring *Isvara*. So, compared with other things, it is eternal, but in truth it is not. To conclude, Sayana would have us conceive that the Veda too enjoys the same status, i.e. in other words, 'the eternity of the Veda' is only a courteous appellation (*upacāra matram*)¹⁰

Sāyana does not seem to address himself directly to the question of Vedas being called *sruti*, though he does try to define the Vedas in the Rg-Veda *bhāṣya* as 'the mass of words (*śabdārāsi*) made up of *mantras* and *brahmanas*',¹¹ and in his commentary on the Taittirīya Samhitā as "that book (*grantha*) which makes known the transcendent means of obtaining the desirable and avoiding the undesirable"¹². But as Sāyana clearly recognises in the Taittirīya Samhitā *bhāṣya* that 'in the first creation like ether and time the generation of the Veda is also from *Brahmā*',¹³ it would appear that his interpretation of the word *sruti* would correspond to its being "heard" by the sages in aeonic succession.

Thus for Sayana the Vedas are *apauruseya* because no man is their author, rather that Brahman is their cause. They are *nitya* in the sense of only being empirically eternal and they are *sruti* in the sense that they are heard by the sages and are not composed by them.

IV

With Surendranath Dasgupta one enters the world of modern scholarship and its implication for the understanding of the Vedas as non human, eternal and revealed documents. The basic change of perspective involved may be summarised thus. Among the ancient Hindus and among the orthodox Hindus of today innocent of historical scholarship 'The belief that the Vedas were revealed complete as they stand without any process of development' seems to have been "widely held" whereas modern scholarship prefers to regard the Vedas as 'the production of individual men and a few

10 Ibid. pp. 43-44

11 Ibid. p. 25

12 Ibid. p. 26. Also see Haridas Bhattacharyya ed. op. cit. Vol. I p. 182.

13 Ibid. p. 43

women, who composed their works at times widely separated and with varying degrees of literary power"¹⁴

Surendranath Dasgupta brings this latter perspective to bear on the appellations which describe the Vedas as *apauruṣeya*, *nitya* and *śruti*. He seems to be inclined to regard the alleged human authorlessness and eternity of the Vedas as in some sense representing an exaggerated appreciation within the tradition of the antiquity of the Vedas

The sacred books of India, the Vedas, are generally believed to be the earliest literary record of the Indo-European race. It is indeed difficult to say when the earliest portions of these compositions came into existence. Many shrewd guesses have been offered, but none of them can be proved to be incontestably true. Max Muller supposed the date to be 1200 B C, Haug 2400 B C and Bal Gangadhar Tilak 4000 B C. The ancient Hindus seldom kept any historical record of their literary, religious or political achievements. The Vedas were handed down from mouth to mouth from a period of unknown antiquity, and the Hindus generally believed that they were never composed by men. It was therefore generally supposed that either they were taught by God to the sages, or that they were of themselves revealed to the sages who were the "seers" (*mantra-draṣṭā*) of the hymns. Thus we find that when some time had elapsed after the composition of the Vedas, people had come to look upon them not only as very old, but so old that they had, theoretically at least, no beginning in time, though they were believed to have been revealed at some unknown remote period at the beginning of each creation¹⁵

As for the Vedas being called *śruti*, Surendranath Dasgupta's explanation is again historical. He remarks on the Vedic corpus

If we roughly classify this huge literature from the points of view of age, language, and subject matter, we can point out four different types, namely the *Saṃhita* or collection of verses (*saṃ* together, *hita* put), *Brahmānas*, *Āraṇyakas* ("forest treatises") and the *Upaniṣads*. All these literatures, both prose and verse were looked upon as so holy that in early times it was thought almost a sacrilege to write them, they were therefore learnt by heart by the Brahmans from the mouth of their preceptors and were hence called *śruti* (literally anything heard)¹⁶

14 Percival Spear ed. *The Oxford History of India* (Oxford Clarendon Press 1961) pp. 44-45

15 Surendranath Dasgupta *op cit*, p. 10

16 *Ibid* p. 12

Thus for Surendranath Dasgupta the Vedas were called *apauruseya* because they went back to an unidentifiable source in antiquity,¹⁷ they were called *ṛṣiya* for the same reason and they were called *śruti* because they were transmitted orally

V

T. M. P. Mahadevan brings a fresh perspective to bear on the familiar appellations of the Vedas in Hinduism. Perhaps his perspective can be described as neo-Hindu. He writes

The Hindus believe that the Vedas which constitute *Śruti* are not compositions of any human mind. The Vedas are eternal (*ṛṣiya*) and impersonal (*apauruseya*). They are the breath of God, eternal truths revealed to the great ṛṣis of yore. The word 'ṛṣi' is significant. It means a seer, from *drś* to see. The ṛṣis saw the truths or heard them. Hence the Vedas are what are heard (*Śruti*). They represent the spiritual experiences of the ancient sages, the glorious heritage of *Āryavarta*.

Hinduism does not swear by any single prophet. It takes its stand on revelation. The seer is only a medium to transmit to posterity the insight which he receives. He is no more the inventor of the Veda than is Newton the generator of the law of gravity. The Vedic truths are discovered and not produced, revealed and not manufactured. And so they are impersonal (*apauruseya*). Unlike natural laws which govern the temporal universe and are bound to pass therewith, the Vedic truths belong to the spiritual realm; they are everlasting values and hence eternal (*ṛṣiya*).¹⁸

It is worth noting that the appellations have been retained but have undergone a radical reinterpretation. This is less obvious in the case of *śruti*, but even here the focus has shifted from God to man, to the seers whose spiritual experiences are now seen as enshrined in the Vedas.¹⁹

The radical shift in the understanding of the terms is more apparent in the case of *apauruseya* and *ṛṣiya*. The insistence on

¹⁷ It may be suggested that from a historical point of view the Vedas may be regarded as *apauruseya* because they are not the work of one man, but rather of families. The distinction then would not be between their being human or divine works but rather between being individual or familial works. Thus the *Rgveda* is neither an historical nor a heroic poem but mainly a collection (*samhitā*) of hymns by a number of priestly families recited or chanted by them with appropriate solemnity at sacrifices to the gods. (R. C. Majumdar, ed., *The Vedic Age* Bombay: Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan, 1957, p. 225).

¹⁸ T. M. P. Mahadevan, *op. cit.* p. 29.

¹⁹ Also see Sarvepalli Radhakrishnan and Charles A. Moore eds., *A Source Book of Indian Philosophy* (Princeton University Press, 1957) p. xviii.

apauruṣeyatā and *nityatā* as representing the impersonal nature of the laws is of great interest, and indeed represents an understanding not without precedent in the Hindu²⁰ and even the Buddhist tradition.²¹

Thus, for T. M. P. Mahadevan the Vedas are *śruti* because traditionally they were "heard" by the seers; they are *apauruṣeya* because they reveal impersonal laws and they are *nitya* because their universe of discourse, namely the spiritual realm, is eternal.

VI

It is clear, therefore, that the Hindu self-understanding of the Vedas, through the ages, though represented by the same appellations, has changed with time. Sometimes the sense of one appellation is modified but not of the other, sometimes an earlier understanding is revived or a new one incorporated but withal the Hindu tradition has succeeded by and large in continuing to regard the Vedas as *śruti*, as *apauruṣeya* and as *nitya*.

20 Vacaspati Miśra "did not believe in the eternity of words and sentences" as constituting *nityatā*, "and the various examples he gives ('fire does not wet', 'water does not burn') show that in his opinion moral laws are invariable like physical laws. Unswervable laws could be stated only in a uniform (*nityata*) way. That seems to be his proof for the sameness of the Veda in every aeon" (K. Satchidananda Murthy, *op. cit.*, p. 42).

21 See *Anguttara-Nikāya* iii 134. Whether Buddhas arise, O priests, or whether Buddhas do not arise, it remains a fact and the fixed and necessary constitution of being, that all its constituents are transitory. This fact a Buddha discovers and masters, and when he has discovered and mastered it, he announces, teaches, publishes, proclaims, discloses, minutely explains, and makes it clear, that all the constituents of being are transitory. Whether Buddhas arise O priests, or whether Buddhas do not arise, it remains a fact and the fixed and necessary constitution of being, that all its constituents are misery. This fact a Buddha discovers and masters, and when he has discovered and mastered it, he announces, teaches, publishes, proclaims, discloses, minutely explains, and makes it clear, that all the constituents of being are misery. Whether Buddhas arise, O Priests, or whether Buddhas do not arise, it remains a fact and the fixed and necessary constitution of being, that all its elements are lacking in an Ego. This fact a Buddha discovers and masters, and when he has discovered and mastered it, he announces, teaches, publishes, proclaims, discloses, minutely explains, and makes it clear, that all the elements of being are lacking in an Ego. (Quoted in Henry Clarke Warren, *Buddhism in Translations* New York: Atheneum, 1970 p. xiv).

MAHIMABHATTA'S CRITICISM OF THE CONCEPT OF DHVANI

By

Satya Vrat

Though the concept of Dhvani had made wide acceptance at the hands of Ālaṃkārikas, there have been some, they are however far smaller in number, who have voiced their opposition to it Rājānaka Mahimabhaṭṭa is one of them In the first chapter of his *Vyakti-tiweka* he devotes considerable space to the criticism of Dhvani and the enunciation of his view which regards it as redundant, the purpose of it being adequately served through the primary power of Denotation, *Abhidha*. Mahimabhaṭṭa is *Abhidhāvādin*. His view may be briefly set forth as follows There is no power in a word except *Abhidhā* *Lakṣanā* resides in the sense and not in the word In the expression *gaur vahikaḥ*, the identification between the ox and the resident of *Vahikas* is known through inference, *anumāna* Similarly is known the situation of a hamlet on the bank of the river Ganga on account of the impossibility of its being located on the flowing current of water This inference, *anumiti*, according to him, is different from the *anumiti*, inference, of the *Naiyayikas*, it is *kāvyanumiti* Suggestion being a secondary sense comes within the purview of the *kāvyanumiti* In expression where secondary sense is understood it is not due to suggestion, it is due to *kāvya-numiti* Now all these are familiar points of criticism There is, however one point where Mahimabhaṭṭa's criticism of the Dhvani School is characterized by freshness of approach He tries to cut at the very root of it It is maintained by the Ālaṃkārikas that the use of the word Dhvani on their part is inspired by the similarity of its function in the *Vyakaranasastra*, *vyāñjakatvasamyat*¹ In the *Vyakaranasastra* the relationship between Dhvani and *Sphoṭa* is that of *vyānjaka*, manifestor, and *vyangya*, manifested This relationship is similar to the one between *ghaṭa* and *pradīpa*, the jar and the lamp Just as a lamp manifests a jar but while manifesting it manifests itself too similarly does Dhvani manifest *Sphoṭa* while manifesting itself too In other words between Dhvani and *Sphoṭa* there is the relationship of *yaugapadya*, simultaneity That is the import of the *ghaṭapradīpanyāya* It is at this Mahima-

1- बहवधाहर्तुं प्रधानमनस्फोटकपदमहाप्रत्ययस्य शब्दस्य ध्वनिरिति व्यवहारः कृतः । तत्रैतत् मतानुसारि ध्वनि-वैरुपि न्याय्यमिति वाच्यमन्यद्वयव्यञ्जनस्य शब्दादयुक्तस्य ।

bhaṭṭa has launched his attack There is no simultaneity here
There is sequence here too Says he

अत एव (क्रमस्य शुलक्षत्वात्) ध्वनमाणां शब्दानां ध्वनि-
व्यपदेशयानामतः सन्निर्यसिनश्च स्फोटानिमित्तस्यार्थस्य
व्यपदेशव्यञ्जकमाधो न सम्भवतीति व्यञ्जकत्वताम्प्याय शब्दार्थान्वयि
काव्ये ध्वनिव्यपदेशो होऽप्यनुपपन्नः १३

The moment the concept of *yaugapadya*, simultaneity, is taken out, the whole concept of Dhvani, based as it is on the similarity of function of Dhvani in Vyākaraṇa and Alankāraśāstras, falls. If in the Vyākaraṇaśāstra it can be shown that there is no relationship of *vyañjaka* and *vyangya* between Dhvani and Sphoṭa which would mean that Dhvani is not *vyañjaka*, the use of the word Dhvani in Alankāraśāstra on the similarity of its function in Vyākaraṇaśāstra *vyañjakatvasāmyad*, would lose its point. With the sequence, *krama*, existing in Dhvani and Sphoṭa, they evidently cannot stand in the relationship of *vyañjaka* and *vyangya* they would instead have to stand in the relationship of *gamaka* and *gamyā*. If we accept Dhvani as *gamaka* or *anumapaka* in Vyākaraṇaśāstra we shall have to accept it as such in Alankāraśāstra. In that case Dhvani will lose its *raison de etre* and would come to be identified with *anumiti* (*dhvaner anumitav antarbhavah*). Now this is a criticism which is of far reaching significance not only for the Alankārikas but also for the Vyākaraṇas who have all along accepted the relationship of *vyañjaka* and *vyangya* between Dhvani and Sphoṭa. With his informed criticism Mahimabhaṭṭa has created a problem for the rhetoricians and the grammarians.



THE CONTROVERSY REGARDING DUSYANTA'S APPEAL TO HIS CONSCIENCE IN THE

ŚĀKUNTALA

By

MINAL M VORA

I

Eastern and western scholars both modern and ancient have showered lavish praises upon the drama *Abhijñāna-Śākuntala* of Kālidāsa. The drama has its appeal not merely because it is highly poetical, dramatic and artistic, but because it appeals to the human heart and deals with the highest values of life.

The commencement of the main scene of the 1st Act is as dynamic as it is dramatic. King Duṣyanta in pursuit of an antelope is drawn near the precincts of Kanva's hermitage. He is about to shoot an arrow but is dissuaded from killing the deer by three ascetics and he respects their request. The King receives from them an invitation to pay a visit to the hermitage and enjoy their hospitality. He learns from them that the great sage Kanva has gone to Somatirtha, having appointed his daughter Śakuntalā to receive guests. Accepting the invitation, the king moves in the direction of the hermitage. At this very moment, his right arm throbs and he wonders how there could be any fruit of this good omen in such tranquil grounds of the penance-grove. According to the science of omens throbbing of the right arm is indicative of the acquisition of a lovely maiden. However, he concludes, "inscrutable are the ways of destiny!"

The king, buoyant with joy on account of the good omen, moves a little further — and hears the sound of some females. Soon he is pleasantly surprised to see three lovely maidens coming in his direction in order to water young plants. He is impressed by their forms and exclaims "How charming their looks are!" In order to watch them without being noticed the king hides himself behind the boughs of a tree. Gradually the king comes to know the identity of Śakuntalā and his admiration for her loveliness makes him reproach the great sage Kanva for his lack of discrimination in appointing her to the exacting duties of the hermitage. Frequent references to her natural beauty made by her friends Priyamvadā and Anasuyā

attract the king towards her and deepen his love for her. Indeed he fully agrees with Priyamvadā, who pays a compliment to Śakuntalā by saying, "With you beside it, this Kesara tree appears as though united with a creeper!" As Śakuntalā is viewing the Vana jyotsnā creeper and the mango tree closely, Priyamvadā jokularly remarks that just as the Vana jyotsnā creeper is united with the mango tree Śakuntalā wishes likewise to obtain a worthy groom! This remark creates joy in Duṣyanta's heart, which however is rent with doubts about Śakuntalā's eligibility for a marriage with a Kṣatriya. He hopes, 'Would that the daughter of the sage is born from a spouse of a different — lower — caste?' Indeed, the very next moment he asserts, "She is worthy of marriage with a Kṣatriya since my virtuous mind (*āryam manaḥ*) longs for her, for to the good, in matters of doubt, the inclination of their conscience is the final authority' and he adds, "Nevertheless, I shall ascertain the facts about her."

The king learns from Śakuntalā's friends that she is eligible for a Kṣatriya's hand and that Kanva intends to marry her to a suitable husband. Śakuntalā too has been struck by the dignified personality of the king and her simple heart experiences a feeling of love for the first time. Both the lovers manifest their mutual feelings so clearly that Anasūyā and Priyamvadā mark the change that has come over Śakuntalā and direct all their efforts to unite the two lovers. Thereafter, Duṣyanta and Śakuntalā are duly married according to the Gāndharva form of marriage. After some days the king returns to his capital. On account of the recent departure of her husband Śakuntalā is deeply engrossed in his thought. At this juncture, the easily irritable sage Durvāsas announces his arrival in the hermitage, but Śakuntalā takes no notice of him and fails to greet him. The sage feels that she has deliberately ignored him and curses her that he of whom she thinks with such concentration will not remember her even when reminded. The two friends of Śakuntalā grew alarmed at this imprecation. Anasūyā tries to appease the sage and he modifies the curse that it will end at the sight of a token of recognition. The friends resolve to keep this secret to themselves.

A few weeks elapsed since the occurrence of this incident. Śakuntalā is *eniente*. The great sage Kanva has just returned from his long journey to Somatṛtha and Anasūyā is a little hesitant to inform him of what has happened in his absence. Fortunately, an incorporeal voice acquaints him about the marriage of Duṣyanta and Śakuntalā. The sage is very glad and blesses Śakuntalā on her choice. He decides to send her to her husband's home that very

morning and Śakuntalā escorted by Gautamī, the matron of the hermitage, and two pupils of Kaṇva leaves for the capital

The 5th Act commences with a musical air The king has just left his judgment seat and is proceeding towards his private chamber At this moment, he hears the strains of music He understands and appreciates the singer, queen Hamsapadikā, who cleverly reproaches him for having forgotten her — his erstwhile love However, the king grows uneasy after hearing the song and knows not why? Indeed, the curse of Durvāsas has made him forget everything about Śakuntalā, nevertheless her impressions are all present in his subconscious which trouble him at present The party from Kanva's hermitage arrives in the palace The king sends instructions to the Purohita to bring the ascetics to the fire-sanctuary after giving them a due welcome He is surprised to see a young maiden among the ascetics but checks his curiosity about her with the words, "Well, somebody else's wife is not to be oggled at " Alas! the king refers to his own lawfully married wife as "somebody's" wife! And when Śarṅgarava conveys Kanva's message to the king and asks him to accept Śakuntalā — his consort quick with child — he wonders and asks "What is all this about?" To Śakuntalā this is a bolt from the blue Hot words are exchanged between Duṣyanta and Śarṅgarava but when the king is not prepared to accept Śakuntalā as his wife, revered Gautamī removes the veil of Śakuntalā, so that her husband may recognise her Indeed, the king is impressed by Śakuntalā's loveliness and exclaims Unable to decide whether this form of unimpaired beauty which has thus arrived was accepted or not by me before, I can neither accept nor reject her, like a bee, at dawn, the Kunda flower with a dew-drop within " Śakuntalā's plight is pitiable She thinks of removing the king's doubt by showing him the signet ring But alas! the ring has disappeared from her finger! The more she attempts to remind him of incidents to which they both were witness in privacy in the penance-grove, the more critical and firm the king becomes He taunts Śakuntalā 'Inborn cleverness is seen even of females other than human, what then of those who are possessed of reason? Indeed, the female cuckoos get their young ones reared by other birds until they are able to fly in the sky "

Śakuntalā is deeply hurt by this remark of the king, as she takes it to be a deliberate reference to her manner of birth She angrily says, "You ill bred fellow! do you judge others by the measure of your own heart?" The king is shaken by this strong remark of Śakuntalā and says to himself "Her anger is so natural! Indeed this renders my mind doubtful " However he addresses Śakuntalā, "Good lady! Duṣyanta's character is well known, yet this is never

noticed" Śakuntalā has no words but tears in reply and when the matter reaches a deadlock, the king unable to take a decision in the matter says, "Either I am confused or she is telling a lie, so either I would be repudiating my wife or shall be sinful by contact with somebody else's wife" — and therefore seeks the advice of his preceptor

Now it will be seen that there is a certain parallelism between the incidents of the 1st and the 5th Acts in so far as they have a bearing on the character and behaviour of the king

In the 1st Act when the king is in doubt whether Śakuntalā is eligible for marriage with a Kṣatriya, he resolves the doubt positively by an appeal to his conscience. In the 5th Act too, an apparently similar situation obtains. The king firmly refuses to accept Śakuntalā as his wife, since he has forgotten all about her. However, he is shaken in his resolve by Śakuntalā's natural anger and feels for a moment, "May be that she speaks the truth". At this juncture, he could have as well appealed to his conscience, but does not. Why?

Students and critics of Kālidāsa's works have dealt with various interesting problems arising from this drama for more than a century. However, it appears, that the question raised above is not discussed by any scholar in this form. Only recently Prof D R Mankad broached this problem in *Samskr̥ti*, (Vol I No 2 1947) a well-known Gujarati literary monthly. He analysed the similarity of situation in both the Acts and expressed his own view about it. Prof M A Mahendale, Shri D K. Shastri and Dr H C Bhayani carried forward the discussion by offering their own opinions on the problem. However, the question still appears to be open for re-examination.

II

Let us briefly analyse the import of the discussion of these learned scholars

According to Prof Mankad the character of king Duṣyanta is noble (Sat) in the 1st Act. In matters of doubts, an appeal to the conscience even of the noble is permissible only when it is free from selfishness and other passions. According to Prof Mankad, though the king falls in love with Śakuntalā, his love has not reached the level of a passion and therefore an appeal made to his conscience is permissible and reliable too. On the other hand Prof Mankad believes in the 5th Act the character of the king is fallen from nobility. He is self-conscious—conscious of his superior status and behaves with Śakuntalā as such. This sense of pride lowers his noble

character, therefore he cannot make an appeal to his conscience in case of doubt here

Prof Mahendale is critical of Prof Mankad's argument, since he holds a diametrically opposite view about this problem and its solution. He feels that the character of the king is nobler in the 5th Act than in the 1st Act. His argument is that in the 5th Act, the king is shown as a man full of moral courage and his character shines at its best there. In spite of his attraction towards Śakuntalā's loveliness and the fact of his childlessness he firmly refuses to accept Śakuntalā as his wife. This reveals his high moral sense. The reason why he uses strong words at Śakuntalā is not that he has become proud, it is merely an act of self-defence on his part. Therefore according to Prof Mahendale, the question of not appealing to his conscience is not, as will be shown later, mainly psychological or based on the king's character.

Prof Mahendale tries to explain the problem as follows: a doubt is always based upon some kind of certainty regarding the thing for which the doubt has arisen. An appeal to one's conscience is possible or reliable only when this precondition exists. In the 1st Act since the king is certain about his attraction towards Śakuntalā, he could make an appeal to his conscience. In the 5th Act, however, he is uncertain about his marriage with Śakuntalā and therefore he cannot make an appeal to his conscience. It can be urged against this reasoning of Prof Mahendale that some kind of certainty regarding a thing should not be an invariable precedent on which a doubt may exist. An attempt to resolve a doubt is necessarily confined to the province of doubt, be in a simple situation in which the entire situation is the object of doubt or a complex situation some part of which is certain and some doubtful. Any object about which there is certainty would lie entirely outside the operation of any *pramāṇa* utilised for the resolution of a doubt. Therefore in the 5th Act, if the king were certain about his marriage with Śakuntalā only a doubt about the embryo within her would have been responsible for any hesitation on his part to accept her. However, this kind of doubt is assigned only a secondary importance by Kālīdāsa.

Dr Bhayani considers Duśyanta's character to be *sat* (noble) throughout the drama and remarks that the question whether his feeling of love was gross in the beginning and was sublimated later or whether his mind was at one time full of passion and sober at another, has no relation with his being noble, but with his internal psychological development. Nobility cannot always be of a uniform quality.

The definition of nobility and the observations made on its basis by Dr Bhayani are practical but not indeed fundamental. The question is: Can the decision arrived at under pressure of particular circumstances on the part of a person of a certain level of nobility be accepted as authoritative if it rests only on an appeal to conscience?

III

Now let us examine the problem independently

The question still remains why the king does not make an appeal to his conscience in the 5th Act, as he does in the 1st Act? Under what circumstances, in matters of doubt, can a righteous person even make an appeal to his conscience? In Smṛti works certain definite rules are laid down regarding the authoritativeness of this and other means of right knowledge. In Manusmṛti the following verse bearing on the question is found

वेदोऽखिलो धर्ममूलः स्मृतिशीले च तद्विदाम् ।
आचाररचय साधूनामात्मनस्तुष्टिरेव च ॥

—Manu 2 6

'The entire Veda, the character of those who are well versed in the Veda and the Smṛtis composed by them, the behaviour of the good and their satisfaction i.e. an appeal to their conscience — these are considered to be the source of Dharma'

Moreover, while dealing with the same topic, the *Mitākṣarā* on the *Yājñavalkya Smṛti* comments as follows

एतेषां विरोधे पूर्वपक्षस्य बलीयस्त्वम् ।

Mita On *Yaj Smṛti* I 7

"In case of conflict among these, each preceding source is stronger than the succeeding one"

This clearly shows that in matters of doubt an appeal to the conscience of the good is permissible only in the absence of all the other means of right knowledge. From this point of view, the king's appeal to his conscience in the 1st Act & not in the 5th Act is quite intelligible and legitimate

Let us examine briefly the character of the king in the 1st Act

In the 1st Act the king in pursuit of an antelope is drawn near the precincts of Kanva's hermitage. It is to be noted that hunting is considered to be the most obnoxious among the vices for kings of

पातनक्षत्रास्त्रिवरचैव मृगया च यथाश्रमम् ।

एतत्कष्टतमं विद्यान्वतुष्य वामदे गणे ॥

—Manu 7 50

Secondly, the king is attracted towards Śakuntalā and falls in love with her. Indeed this is so human in his case, although it accentuates his passion and thus bars his character from being perfectly Sāttvika. Though this is the case, yet while making an appeal to his conscience regarding Śakuntalā's eligibility for a marriage with a Kṣatriya, he refers to his own heart as virtuous. If the character of the king at the moment when the doubt about Śakuntalā arises in his heart is analysed, it will be noticed that his character is virtuous and his heart is above selfishness and other passions. The fact that he permits a doubt to arise in his mind about the matter which he loves so passionately and is prepared to listen to the direction of the Inner voice on the matter shows that for the moment he has brushed aside all personal considerations of his likes and dislikes and has adopted an attitude of total detachment—which is always the hall mark of a virtuous man (Satpurusa). This appeal to his conscience is the only means of resolving his doubt for none of the other means enumerated in the Dharma Śāstra is available to him at the moment.

Let us now analyse the character of the king in the 5th Act. The question whether the king should have made an appeal to his heart in order to resolve a doubt really arises only when he feels shaken from his self assurance and observes "The anger of this lady appears to be genuine as it makes me doubt my own position in the matter." In the preceding portion of the Act the author appears to have attempted to provide a general indication of Duṣyanta's nobility of character as well as a suggestion that Durvāsa's curse has already begun to operate. His question, "Has this lady been married by me before?" to Śārngarava when the latter commends Śakuntalā for acceptance as his wife in the name of Kanva clearly shows that he has forgotten all about her as a result of Durvāsa's curse. It does not represent any doubt in his mind about the matter, because he is firmly convinced that it was not so. Duṣyanta, though pleasure-loving is yet a righteous king devoted to the discharge of his duties. His statement "Duṣyanta's character is well-known" is not made with any sense of arrogance but is an explanation in self defence against the malignant remarks of Śakuntalā. Thus, the character of Duṣyanta cannot be said to have undergone any fundamental change in his basic character in the 5th Act (Being essentially a virtuous king whose appeal to his conscience in matters of doubt has once proved true in the 1st Act he could have made a

similar appeal in the 5th Act also, when he is really thrown into doubt about his relationship with Śakuntalā by her transparently natural anger. But he does not do so — indeed he could not do so, because in this Act he is not alone in a forest but in his palace attended upon by his moral and religious 'friend, philosopher and guide' the royal priest Somarāta. When the expert guidance of the family priest steeped in the learning of the Vedas and the Smṛtis is available to him, it is not proper — nor permissible from the point of view of Dharmaśāstra rules — for the king to appeal to his conscience and resolve his doubt in the light thereof. Thus, the solution of the problem under discussion would lie more in the realm of the rules of behaviour laid down in the Smṛtis than in any psychological or moral differentiation in the character of Duṣyanta in the two Acts.

ADOPTION. UNMARRIED MOTHER*

By
H S URSEKAR

It is wellknown that adoption is legally permissible only under the Hindu Law. The Muslim Law and the Christian Law do not recognise adoption. The Parsis can adopt a son known as the Palak son for a limited purpose of performing some rituals, but such a son acquires no rights in the property.

Hindu Law of adoption goes back to the hoary past. For the Hindu, son is the most important achievement of life. A son is believed to redeem his parents from a hell called 'put'. A son continues the family name, family line and gives oblations to the forefathers. Adoption for a Hindu is thus a matter of vital religious significance both in this world and hereafter. The Smṛitikaras like Vasiṣṭha, Baudhayana, Shaunaka, Manu and Yajñavalkya have given a great spiritual cum secular importance to adoption. An adopted son is one of the twelve kinds of sons recognised by Manu and Yajñavalkya. Shaunaka in a telling epithet describes an adopted child as the reflection of the natural son.

Manu and Yajñavalkya have recognised as many as twelve sons out of which only three are recognised today viz. natural born son, adopted son and a kṛtrima son in Mithila School. These sages were so advanced in their views that they have given recognition even to the son of an unmarried woman, to a foundling and even to son who was in embryo at the time of his mother's marriage.

The Hindu law of adoption was considerably conflicting and uncertain due to different interpretations of the texts of the ancient law-givers and this created a number of problems according to different schools of Hindu law. To illustrate it may be pointed out that the text of Vasiṣṭha that "a woman shall not give or take in adoption without the consent of the Bharta" was interpreted differently by various commentators and hence the right of the woman to adopt was different according to various schools. According to Mithila school it was held that a widow cannot adopt as the husband ought to be present at the time of adoption and must give consent personally to his wife to take the child in adoption.

In Bengal, Benaras and Madras a widow may adopt under the authority from her husband in that behalf. Such authority may be

* For technical reasons diacritical marks are not used in this article—Ed

express or implied It cannot be however implied from the absence of a prohibition

In the Madras State a widow may also adopt without her husband's authority, if where the husband was separate at the time of death, she obtains the consent of his sapindas and where he was joint, she obtains the consent of his undivided co-parceners In the Bombay State a widow may adopt even without any authority of the husband provided there is no prohibition by the husband to his wife to adopt after his death

However after the passing of the Hindu Adoptions and Maintenance Act 1956 the conflicting interpretations have been nullified and the adoption law is now uniform, *sensible and certain* which are the conspicuous advantages of codification

This enactment has inducted a number of vital changes in the traditional law of adoption Formerly only a son could be adopted but now even a daughter can be adopted A bachelor or a spinster can adopt a child of his choice, he or she even can adopt one son and one daughter that is two children Formerly there were no restrictions on the age of the child to be adopted In the Bombay case of *Balabai vs Mahadu*, 48 Bombay, 387 a married man was validly adopted along with his wife and children by widow of younger age Now under Section 9 of the Act the adopted child must not be more than 15 years old and must be unmarried These restrictions are salutary

However I think there is a lacuna in Section 9 of the Hindu Adoptions and Maintenance Act 1956 dealing with persons capable of giving a child in adoption This provision is to the effect that if the father is alive he alone has the right to give his child in adoption with the consent of the mother of the child The right of the mother to give a child in adoption with which we are concerned here is laid down in sub-section 3 of section 9 of the Act It runs as follows

The mother may give the child in adoption if the father is dead or has completely and finally renounced the world or has ceased to be a Hindu or has been declared by a Court of competent jurisdiction to be of unsound mind

It will be seen that the present position is that an unmarried mother has no right of giving her child in adoption To remove this lacuna in the law it is proposed that sub section 3 to section 8 of the Adoptions and Maintenance Act 1956 be amended so as to confer such a right on the mother of the child by adding some words

"or mother of a child born out of wedlock "at the end of section 9
(3) The reasons for this amendment may be stated as follows

We are living in an age of equality of men and women Further under the Indian Constitution there is an inherent equality between man and woman Man and woman are alike in the eye of the law.

Dr Derrett the learned professor of Hindu Law holds the view that the Dharmashastras of the Hindus is a mine of wisdom and so why not go back to the ancient Hindu Law Vasistha is an authority on the law of Adoption It states that माता पिता वा दद्याताम् । meaning thereby that a mother or a father may give a child in adoption There are no restrictive words in this text against an unmarried mother Further this interpretation seems to be substantiated by the position that Manu and Yajnavalkya have recognised a Kanina that is the son of an unmarried mother If an unmarried daughter's son can be recognised by the ancient law gives it is logical to urge that she must also have a right to give such a Kanina son in adoption. Further such an unmarried mother giving birth to a son is as much a mata as a wife

According to the courts the objects of adoption are two fold the first in religious, to secure spiritual benefit to the adopter and his ancestors by having a son for the purpose of offering funeral cakes and libations of water and to perpetuate the adopter's name, see the case of Sitaram vs Harihar (1911) 35 Bombay 169 It will be seen that in modern social behaviour the emphasis has shifted from the spiritual aspect of adoption to its secular impact The purpose of adoption was more for the welfare of his parents by continuing the family name in this world and hereafter by offering oblations to the deceased parents and ancestors so that they may secure a place of peace and happiness in the next world But now with the diminishing faith in spiritual values the secular aspect of adoption is gaining ground slowly so that it is the welfare of the child which is becoming the paramount consideration Hence there is no reason why an unmarried mother or even a woman of vice should be denied the right to give her child in adoption even though it might have been conceived in sin and shame because that does not take away the innocence of the child

In fact the Hindu Adoptions Act 1956 has broken a new ground by conferring the right to take a child in adoption upon an unmarried woman under section 8 Then why should an unmarried woman be denied the capacity and the right to give her child in adoption

Time is now ripe to urge that this lacuna in the legislation should be removed

It can be now maintained that capacity to adopt has little bearing on the marriage status, as now even a spinster or bachelor has the capacity to adopt a child (section 7 & 8). Hence it is reasonable to contend that adoption has little or no nexus with married status, as lack of married status is no bar to take a child in adoption

Further it can be also contended successfully that illegitimacy of the child is no bar to its capacity for being given in adoption. The section 9(4) provides that even where the parent of the child is not known the guardian of a child may with the previous permission of the court give the child in adoption including the guardian himself. It is wellknown that the authorities of Anathashramas are authorised by the court to give such illegitimate children in adoption. Hence it is clear that illegitimacy of the child is no bar to its capacity of being given in adoption, and hence the son of an unmarried woman should be clothed with a capacity of being given in adoption by his mother

In case of a divorce I may suggest that if the dissolution of marriage has been obtained at the instance of the father, the right to give the child in adoption from the said marriage, should be conferred on the divorcee respondent and for this purpose the Hindu Adoptions and Maintenance Act 1956 may be amended suitably

I had an occasion to place the above views before the Workshop on adoption held in Poona in January 1976 and the social workers who had participated in the said workshop welcomed this suggestion

In fine I may urge that section 9 of the Hindu Adoption and Maintenance Act 1956 may be suitably amended to bring about this reforms in adoption law. This would be in tune with the spirit of the movement of women's lib and the welfare of the child

A FRESH INTERPRETATION

Of

नक्षत्रैर्यश्च जीवति ।

By

S G MOGHE

It is an admitted fact that in the third chapter of the Manu-Smṛti, we have a very lengthy description of the Brahmins worthy of being invited for the Śrāddha ceremony and also the Brahmins who should be specifically avoided

In the Śrāddha section of this Dharma-Śāstra, the Manu-Smṛti gives a following stanza¹ This stanza simply means that a trainer of elephants, oxen, horses, or camels, he who subsists by Astrology, a bird-fancier and he who teaches the use of arms should be avoided for a Śrāddha ceremony

Now here the question arises as regards the exact interpretation of the expression 'नक्षत्रैर्यश्च जीवति । All the commentators of the Manu Smṛti take this word as referring to a professional astrologer This is evident from the following observations of these commentators

Medhātithi (825 A D to 900 A D) remarks that by the word 'nakṣatra' the science of astrology is intended to be conveyed Sarvajñanārayana² (before 1400 A D) also subscribes to this view of Medhātithi Kullūka (1150 A D to 1300 A D), Rāghavananda³ (later than 1350 A D) and Govindarāja (1050 to 1140 A D) also have exhibited complete agreement with the view point of Medhātithi

It is further interesting to note here that Nīlakanṭha (1600-1660 A D) also quotes a stanza⁴ from the Yama Smṛti in his Śrāddha-Mayūkha, to show that a professional astrologer is disqualified for the Śrāddha Ceremony

If the above interpretation is accepted, then it naturally follows that in the eyes of Dharma-Śāstra and particularly the Manu-Smṛti,

1 हस्तिगोश्वोद्धमको नक्षत्रैर्यश्च जीवति । मनुस्मृति III 162

पक्षिणो पीपको यश्च यूढाचारस्तश्च च ॥

2 तत्र जीवति ज्योतिषिक । मनुस्मृति U II P 172

3 Ibid p 172

4 Ibid pp 172-173

a professional astrologer is completely prohibited for the Śrāddha ceremony.

It must be stated in this very context that MM Dr P V Kane has already proved the inseparable or inextricable relation⁵ between the Dharma-Śāstra and the science of Astrology, in his History of Dharma-Śāstra. In view of this relation, it would not be charitable on our part to jump to the above conclusion that a professional astrologer is condemned by the Manu-Smṛiti in particular and Dharma-Śāstra in general.

The most important question to be considered in this respect is whether such a professional astrologer is also given the same treatment of odium even in the works of astrology or not.

The help rendered by the work 'Brhatsamhitā of Varāhamihira (500-550 A D) is of paramount importance to decide this important issue. The Brhat samhitā⁷ II 16 is quoted by the commentators Rāmācārya (1522 Śake i e 1600 A D) and his nephew Govinda on the Muhūrta Cintāmaṇi I 2. This stanza simply means that he who becomes an astrologer or rises to the position of an astrologer without possessing the adequate knowledge of the science of astrology is regarded as defiling the line of Brahmins and is known as a sinner. It is worthy of note here that Varāhamihira has used the expression 'nakṣatrasūcaka' which is very significant in this respect. Bhaṭṭotpala⁸ (850 A D according to Dr P V Kane) explains the word 'nakṣatrasūcaka' as 'nakṣatrapisuna'. But Govinda on the Muhūrta Cintāmaṇi I 2 explains⁹ the word 'nakṣatrasūcaka' as a person who visits from one house to another and unasked goes on foretelling good or bad results in accordance with the constellations such as Aśvinī, Bharanī, etc. Here it appears that he has offered an etymological explanation of the word 'nakṣatrasūcaka'. This elucidation on the part of Govinda is very important to interpret the expression 'नक्षत्रैर्यश्च जायति ।' of the Manu-Smṛiti III 162.

It has to be emphasised here that both Rāmācārya and Govinda in their comments on the Muhūrta-Cintāmaṇi I 2 further quote a stanza¹⁰ from the text of Vasiṣṭha to indicate that a Brahmin who is nakṣatrasūcaka is to be avoided for all the ceremonies pertaining to religious matters.

5 नक्षत्रविधिपुष्पाङ्गान् मूहान् मङ्गलानि च ।

न निदिशानि य विप्रसिद्धैर्भूत ह्यथैव भवेत् ॥ धाडमयूख 1* 37

6 History of Dharma Śāstra Vol. V Part I. pp 463-718

7 अविदितैश्च यं शास्त्रं दृष्ट्वैव प्रयत्ने । मूहसहितं
य पश्चित्तुषको पापो ज्ञायो नक्षत्रमूचकः । मूहसहितः II 6 p 76

8 Ibid p. 76.

9 मूहे मूहे गणनायुक्तं एव नक्षत्राण्यश्विन्यादीनि शुभाशुभफलमूचकानि मूचयतीति नक्षत्रमूची । पौष्पधारा p 8

10 नक्षत्रमूचीं धनुः पापकरो हेयः यथा एवमुच्यते । प्रवितामरा on मूहविशामर्णि 1* 5

The expression 'nakṣatrasūcaka' is aptly explained in a stanza¹¹ quoted by Rāmācārya in his comments on the Muhūrta Cintāmaṇi I 2 This stanza further indicates that he who does not possess the proper knowledge of the rise and end of the tithis, and also the movements of the planets but simply goes on foretelling mainly depending upon others is to be treated as a 'nakṣatrasūcaka' Needless to say that such an astrologer is a sham astrologer who is not a full fledged astrologer, but who pretends to be a good astrologer. From this, it is evident that one who is a sham astrologer or he who goes and visits from one house to another house and unasked foretells good or bad events is looked down upon in the science of astrology It is a noted fact that in the society, hypocrisy is always condemned That is why it is sometimes said that hypocrisy is a tribute vice paid to virtue

Rāmācārya in his comments on the Muhūrta Cintāmaṇi I 2 further quotes a stanza¹² which points out that one who observes fasts as per the directions given by a sham astrologer is bound to go to a place full of pitchy darkness

It would be further interesting to see the text of Varāhamihira in respect of the position of an astrologer in the field of astrology and particularly in relation to the Śrāddha aspect of Dharma Śāstra

Varāhamihira in his Brhat-samhitā¹³ II 8 points out that the position of an astrologer is tantamount to the position of the sun in the sky or the moon at night In his absence, even a good king is likely to go astray From this, it is evident that a good astrologer guides the virgin steps of a good king on the hard road of politics

In the Brhatsamhitā¹⁴ II 9, it is further stated that for want of a good astrologer, there would be a confusion worst confounded in respect of the muhūrtas, tithis, nakṣatras etc

In the Brhatsamhitā¹⁵ II 11 one is further advised not to stay in the region in which there is no stay of a good astrologer A good astrologer is looked upon as the eye (of a good king) and so long as he is there, there can be no scope for any sin as such

11 तिथ्युत्पत्ति न जानति ब्रह्मणा नैव साधनम् ।
परवाक्यत वक्तुं ते वै नक्षत्रमुच्यते ॥ Ibid p 5

12 नक्षत्रमुच्यते हिन्दुमुपवास करोति य ।
स ब्रह्मत्यधनामिस्त्र साधंमुच्यते विदित्वा ॥ Ibid p 5

13 अथनेमा यथा रात्रिरनादित्य यथा नभ ।
तथाभावात्तरो राजा समपश्य द्वाप्यजनि ॥ भारतसंहिता II 8

14 बहूतनिधिनमत्रयतवरवायन तथा ।
सर्वोपवाकृतानि स्तुन स्यात् सावतरो यदि ॥ बहुसंहिता II 9

15 तस्माद्वाजाधिपन्त्यो विद्वान् सावतरोऽप्यगोः ।
अथ यथा धियं भागान् धयन्व सधर्मीयता ॥ बहुसंहिता ॥ II, II P 74

Varāhamihira in his *Bṛhatsamhitā* II.13 further adds¹⁶ that he who knows the science of astrology completely with the help of books and also can deliver lectures on the same is looked upon as foremost and purifying the line of Brahmins particularly at the time of the Śrāddha ceremony. The expression 'agrabhuk' in the text of Varāhamihira is not meaningless and suggests that such an astrologer is the most competent person to eat food at the Śrāddha ceremony

From the above textual evidence furnished by the author of *Bṛhatsamhitā* and Rāmācārya and Govinda in their comments on the *Muhūrta-Cintāmaṇi*, it is clear that this information runs counter to the interpretation offered by the commentators of the *Manu-Smṛti* and adopted by Bühler and MM Dr P V Kane

Here it would be interesting to see the attitude of the *Manu-Smṛti* in particular and the Dharma-Śāstra authors in general towards the science of astrology and one who knows this science of astrology. This will also offer us a further clue for further interpretation of the passage under discussion

It may be pointed out here that in the *Manu-Smṛti* III 185, a Brahmin who knows the six subsidiary sciences such as Śikṣa, Kalpa, etc is regarded as a competent person to be invited for the Śrāddha ceremony. It may be noted here that the study of six subsidiary sciences includes the study of astrology also. This simply is indicative of the fact that the attitude of the *Manu-Smṛti* is not altogether antagonistic. The expression 'śadangavid' is also adopted in the *Yama*¹⁷ *Smṛti* quoted in the Śrāddha Kāṇḍa of the *Kṛtyakalpataru* and the same is also adopted in the *Brahmapurāṇa*¹⁸ quoted in the Śrāddha Kāṇḍa of the *Kṛtyakalpataru*. It may be noted here that some change has taken place in the outlook of the writers on *smṛtis*. In the *Viṣṇu-Smṛti*¹⁹ 83 6, it is said that one who is expert in one of the six subsidiary sciences is regarded as a competent Brahmin to be invited at the Śrāddha ceremony. If this is accepted then it means that there is nothing wrong in inviting a Brahmin well-versed in the science of astrology for the Śrāddha ceremony. From this discussion, it is evident that the *Manu-Smṛti*, *Yama-Smṛti*, *Viṣṇu-Smṛti* and the *Brahma Purāṇa* are inclined to attach importance to the science of astrology and to the one who possesses

16 अथतरवायतश्चैतत्कृत्स्नं जानाति यो द्विजः । बृहत्संहिता
अष्टमस्कं ह मवेच्छाद पुनितं पद्धितपावनम् । P 75

17 शिशुस्मृतिहोत्री च न्यायविज्ञः षडङ्गवित् । इत्यङ्गस्मृतयः
मन्त्रब्राह्मणविज्ञैश्च यन्त्रान्यो घर्मपाठकः । आदिकाण्ड P 64

18 षडङ्गपरिज्ञानयोगी यज्ञतत्त्वज्ञ एव च ।
अपचित्तार्थी विप्रो वा श्राद्धकल्पविदेव च ॥ Ibid p 70

19 वेदाङ्गमस्याप्यन्यस्य पारम् । विष्णुस्मृति P 806

the adequate knowledge of this science of astrology and are not at all antagonistic towards the same

From the foregoing discussion, it would be reasonable to draw the following legitimate inferences

(1) The Manu Smṛtis and the Brahma Purana admit the importance of the science of Astrology, the knowledge of which is to be possessed by a Brahmin fit for the Śraddha-ceremony

(2) The Manu-Smṛti III 162 condemns a sham astrologer who does not possess sound knowledge of the science of astrology and such a sham astrologer is treated as disqualified for the Śraddha-ceremony

(3) The text of Varahamihira and Ramacārya and Govinda the commentators of the Muhūrta cintāmaṇi offer invaluable help in interpreting the expression नक्षत्रैश्च जीवति of the Manu Smṛti III 162

(4) The expression नक्षत्रैश्च जीवति । of the Manu Smṛti III 162 comes very close to the expression 'nakṣatrasucaka used by Varahamihira and properly interpreted by Ramacārya and Govinda in their comments on the Muhurta Cintamani

(5) The text of Varahamihira showers a meed of praise upon the thorough astrologer who is capable of guiding the virgin steps of a good king on the hard road of politics It also condemns the position of a sham astrologer in the eyes of society

In the light of the above inferences it would be fair to conclude that the Manu Smṛti III 162 condemns a sham astrologer for the Śraddha Ceremony and not a thorough astrologer by bringing about a via media or a golden mean between the texts of Dharma-Śāstra and astrology

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- 1 The Manu-Smṛti with nine commentaries Vol II published by Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan, 1975
- 2 The Viṣṇu Smṛti with the commentary Keshava Vajayanti of Nandapandita published by Adyar Library Madras 1964
- 3 The Bṛhatsaṃhita of Varahamihira with the commentary of Bhaṭṭotpala published by Saraswati Bhavan series No 97 Benares 1968
- 4 Śraddha Mayukha of Nilakantha edited by J R Gharpure Published in the collection of Hindu law texts series No 18 1977
- 5 The Kṛtyakalpataru-Śraddhakāṇḍa published by K. V Rangaswami Aiyangar Baroda Oriental Institute 1950
- 6 The Muhurta Cintamani with the commentary of Ramacarya published by Venkateshwar Press Bombay 1928
- 7 The Muhurta Cintamani with the commentary of Govinda published by Venkateshwar Press Bombay
- 8 The Date of Bhaṭṭotpala fixed by Dr P V Kane in the Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society Vol. XXXII pp 147 149

BHARATIYA VIDYA

An Indological Research Quarterly on all subjects
connected with Indian Culture

All contributions and subscriptions to the Journal
should be sent to the Editor, Bharatiya Vidya, Bhara-
tiya Vidya Bhavan, Kulapati K M Munshi Marg,
Bombay - 400 007

Subscription Rate Rs 30/- Per Year



SAMVID

Sanskrit Quarterly

Annual Subscription Rs 6/-

Single copy Rs 2/-

BHARATIYA VIDYA BHAVAN

Kulapati K M Munshi Marg,
Bombay - 400 007

The History & Culture of the Indian People

(in Eleven volumes)

Planned Organised and Directed by Dr K M Munshi, President, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan.

General Editor R C Majumdar M A Ph D, F A S, F B B R A S., Director, History of Freedom Movement in India, Government of India Ex Vice Chancellor and Professor of History, Dacca University Hon Head of the Department of History, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan

Assistant Editors A D Pusalkar, M A, LL B Ph D, and A K Majumdar, M A D Phil

This is the first history of India written exclusively by her own people which brings to bear on the problems a detached and critical appreciation. A team of over sixty scholars of repute present herein a comprehensive and up-to-date account of the political socio-economic and cultural history of the Indian people

VOLUMES PUBLISHED

Volume I—'The Vedic Age (From the earliest times to 600 B C) Price Rs 80

Volume II—'The Age of Imperial Unity (From 600 B C to 320 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume III—'The Classical Age' (320 750 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume IV—'The Age of Imperial Kanauj (750 1000 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume V—'The Struggle for Empire (100 1300 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume VI—'The Delhi Sultanate (1300 1526 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume VII—'The Mughul Empire' (1526 1707 A D) Price Rs 90

Volume VIII—'The Maratha Supremacy' (1708 1818 A D) Price Rs 90

Volume IX—'British Paramountcy and Indian Renaissance (Part I) (1818-1905 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume X—'British Paramountcy and Indian Renaissance (Part II) (1818-1905 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume XI—'Struggle for Freedom' (1905 1947) Price Rs 80

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED

WITH PLATES, MAPS AND PLANS

BHARATIYA VIDYA BHAVAN

Kulapati K M Munshi Marg BOMBAY-400 007

BHĀRATĪYA VIDYĀ SERIES

Rs 45/00

- 1 • *विश्वविद्यालय* by Buddhaghosacarya, ed Dharmananda Kosambi 4 00
- 2 • *भरतेश्वर बाह्वनिरास* ed Muni Jinavijayaji 4 00
- 3 *भारतीय भाषाशास्त्र* on the subject by Devabodha ed Dr S K De 4 00
- 4 *भगवद्गीता* भारतीय संनानि च Mm Anantakrishna Shastri 10 00
- 5 *भगवद्गीता* by Rudradasa ed Dr A N Upadhye 2 00
- 6 • *गुजराती ध्वन्यनवधि* Gujarati translation of Dr Turner's Gujarati Phonology by Prof K K Shastri 20 00
- 7 • *वेदवाङ्मयविज्ञान* by Siddhasenadivakara ed Pandit Shukhlalji 3 00
- 8 *रसतलप्रदीपिका* by Allaraja ed Dr R N Dandekar 6 00
- 9 • *शतपथब्री* by Bhartrhari with a new commentary ed D D Kosambi 2 00
- 10 • *Puranic Words of Wisdom* ed Dr A P Karmarkar 2 00
- 11 *मयोपाष्टकसंग्रह* ed Miss Pratibha Trivedi 1 00
- 12 • *वेदमन्त्रा* by Bhattoj Dikshita, ed Pandit R K Patanakar Introduction by Prof P K Gode 1 00
- 13 • *महाभारतविज्ञान* by Kshirasamudrasamisra ed Acharya T A V Dikshitar 5 00
- 14 • *कीमरीमहोत्सव* by Smt Shakuntala Rao Shastri 4 00
- 15 *कार्तवीर्य-पूषमाण* भातपूषण ed Prof K K Shastri 15 00
- 16 • *Sacrifice in Rigveda* by Prof K R Potdar 8 50
- 17 • *वाय्यापार* by Dr Harivallabh C Bhayani 6 00
- 18 • *भवनमोहना* by Shamala Bhat ed Dr H C Bhayani 8 00
- 19 • *सिंहामनवर्गी* (Stories 18 22) by Shamala Bhat ed Dr H C Bhayani 8 00
- 20 *कालपची* by Shamala Bhat ed A S Patel 12 00
- 21 *व्यवहारप्रकाश* by Prithvichandra (from his *व्यवहारप्रकाश*) Part I critically ed J H Dave 3 00
- 22 *भरतिह यगना वविमो* by K M Munshi 20 00
- 23 • *Rigveda Mandala VII*—ed and translated into English with Critical Notes and Introduction by Prof H D Velankar 10 00
- 24 *भरतवीरी भवने कस्तुरचन्नी भारता* by Shamala Bhat ed Smt Indira Merchant and Dr Ramesh Jani 7 00
- 25 • *Deposed King Thibaw of Burma in India 1885-1916* by W S Desai 3 00
- 26 *Syadvadamuktavali or Jainavisesatarka and Bhavasaptahika* by Sri Vasavatsagara ed by Prof S A Upadhyaya
- 27 *Vedanta Tatvaloka* by Janardana ed by Acharya T A V Dikshitar Introduction in English by Prof S A Upadhyaya and Preface in Sanskrit by Acharya S Subrahmanya Sastri 8 00
- 28 *The Brahma Sutras and their Principal Commentaries Vol I* by Dr B N K Sharma 35 00
- 29 *Manu smṛti with nine commentaries* by Medhatithi Sarvajnanārāyana Kulluka Raghavananda Nandana Ramacandra Manurama Govindaraja and Bharuci Vol I (Adhyayas 1-2) ed by J H Dave 40 00
- 30 *Rksuktasatī with important Padapatha English Translation Critical Notes Select Glossary etc* by Professor H D Velankar with an Introduction by Professor S A Upadhyaya 27 00
- 31 *Bibliography of Theses in the Subject of Gujarati Language and Literature (upto 1970)* compiled by Dr N I Pandya 1 50
- 32 *The Brahma-Sutras and their Principal Commentaries Vol II* by Dr B N K Sharma 45 00
- 33 *Manu Smṛti Vol II with nine commentaries (Adhyayas 3-4)* Ed by J H Dave 60 00
- 34 *The Mahabharata—A Study of the Critical Edition (with special reference to the Suparnakhyāna of the Adiparvan)* by Prof Mahesh M Mehta 12 00
- 35 *Cultural Sources from the Veda* by Dr Sadashiv Ambadas Dange 15 00
- 36 *The Brahma Sutras and their Principal Commentaries Vol III* by Dr B N K Sharma 120 00
- 37 *Manu Smṛti Vol III with nine Commentaries (Adhyayas 5 f)* Ed by J H Dave 50 00

* Asterisked titles are out of print

BHĀRATĪYA VIDYĀ

A quarterly research organ of the Bhavan
on all subjects connected with Indian Culture

VOLUME XXXIX : No 2

1979



Editors:

PROF JAYANTKRISHNA H DAVE, M A , LL B

PROF. S A. UPADHYAYA, M.A.



BHARATIYA VIDYA BHAVAN

BOX 11-400 007

Issued in June 1979

EDITORIAL COMMITTEE

Prof. J. H. Dave



Prof. S. A. Upadhyaya

Dr. A. K. Majumdar

CONTENTS

	Page
Sabhā and Samiti in the Vedic Age— <i>Dr Amulya Kumar Bhattacharjee</i> , Principal, Govt Assam Sanskrit College, Gauhati	1
Kaṣyapa and his work— <i>Dr Perī Sarveswara Sharma</i> , Indisch-Ostasiatisches Seminar der Philipps Universitaet, MARBURG, Federal Republic of Germany	5
The Date of Bhāgavata Purāṇa— <i>Dr Jawahar Lal Sharma</i> , Head, Dept of Sanskrit, Vidyā Niketana, Pilani (Rajasthan)	14
Bhāsa— <i>A Jvalana Mitra—Shri Pravin V Mehta</i> , Principal, J C College of Law, Vile Parle, Bombay-400 056	19
Abhinavagupta's contribution to Rasa theory— <i>Dr V M Kulkarni</i> , Hon Director, MM Dr P V Kane Research Institute, The Asiatic Society of Bombay	25
The Process of Rasanispatti— <i>Dr (Smt) G V Davane</i> , Professor of Sanskrit, Elphinstone College, Bombay	30
The Theories of Rasa and Dhvani— <i>Dr Y S Walimbe</i> , Sanskrit Dept Kishinchand Chellaram College, Bombay	37
Sānta Rasa— <i>Shri R T Vyas</i> , Bharatiya Vidyā Bhavan, Bombay	47
Dr V Raghavan—An Obituary— <i>Dr K K Raja</i> , University of Madras, Madras	59
Notes & News	63

SABHĀ AND SAMITI IN THE VEDIC AGE

By

AMULYA KUMAR BHATTACHARJEE

Kingship embracing various constitutional divergences and asseverating varied constitutional status enjoyed by the rulers of States is doubtless the predominant administrative authority in a Vedic India. While the administrative chief of Madhyadesa is constitutionally designated as *rājā*, the chief of the Western region is termed *Samraṭ*, of Northern *Virāṭ*, and of Southern *Bhoja*. Notwithstanding these divergences of constitutions chosen by the sons of the soil, the presence of the *Sabhā*¹ and *Samiti*² like the council of ministers is common to all. These popular assemblies—the *Sabhā* and the *Samiti*—play, the vast Vedic literature solemnly confirms, no negligible role in matters of administration of a Vedic State. The *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*³ mentions *Sabhā* but keeps silent about the *Samiti*. This silence of a solitary Brahmanical text can hardly deny its existence as it is referred to time and again in the anterior, posterior and contemporary texts ranging from the *RK Samhitā* to the latest Vedic literature.

The *Sabhā* is the assembly of the learned and virtuous ones⁴. The members of the *Sabha* are nominated by the king and called *Sabhāsad*⁵. The feudal kings included in the list of *Ratnins* or *Rajakartarah* or the king Markers' Body are also members of the *Sabhā*. According to Ludwig the *Sabha* represents the Upper House consisting of the nobles and the priests, while the *Samiti* represents the Lower House comprising the commoners⁶. A Brahmin is called *Sabheya*⁷ or a man fit to occupy a seat in the *Sabhā*. This is asseverative of noble birth and erudition as the qualifications of a member of the Upper House. The expression '*rayiḥ sabhāvan*'⁸ conveying the sense of worthy wealth of the *Sabha* evidently corroborates the above view held by Ludwig. Macdonell and Keith also seem to be inclined to accept it⁹. Regarding the age of a member of the assemblies the later Vedic texts confirm that a man enjoying youth is indeed entitled to be a member—'*Sabheyo yuva*'¹⁰. The expression '*sabheyam yuvanam*' also corroborates the above view¹¹. The *Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa* further states that young man belonging to the first half of the average human longevity is only entitled to be a member¹². Thus neither a minor nor an old could qualify for membership of either of the Houses.

The Lord of the Sabhā is called Sabhāpati¹³ which office is invariably ornamented by the King Sabhāpāla¹⁴ also sometimes conveys the sense of the Sabhāpati while, according to R K Mukherji,¹⁵ it denotes the Sergeant of the Assembly The Sabhā functions, the above author holds, as a parliament for the disposal of public business by debate and discussion¹⁶ The Brahmins erudite in Vedic lores, the *Āitareya Brāhmaṇa* reveals,¹⁷ are the members of the Sabhā of the divine king Soma They are all comrades of the king and they hardly harbour any malice against him They enter the Assembly bearing friendliness in their mind¹⁸ The comrades carry on discussion on diverse problems relating to the daily administration and exchange their views with the lord of the House—the King Nevertheless, the King's decision is invariably honoured by the members of the Sabhā and they would rather themselves incur defeat out of friendliness In other words, the members or the comrades of the Sabhā submit themselves to the king even though their views diverged Thus the King's desire or decision very often becomes the final word No member of the Sabha is either a disloyal or a bitter critic of the king They all belong to the Treasury Bench Having entered the House, they wait respectfully and affectionately for the auspicious arrival of the latter¹⁹ They become highly delighted when the lord of the House enters the hall with fame and friendliness and pomp and grandeur²⁰ in commensuration with the constitutional status enjoyed by him The Sabhā, according to Zimmer, however, represents the village council and the Sabhāpati denotes Gramaṇī or the Village Headman²¹

The Samiti comprising the peoples' representative, on the other hand, represents the people in general²² It is the popular assembly which counsells for the welfare of the whole people²³ The aim of the Samiti lies in the unity of thought, and the minds of the members are identical²⁴ In other words the welfare of the whole people is the only motto of the Samiti, and not a single member diverges there It is, therefore, hardly improper to maintain that the Samiti or the Lower House, too, contributes much to the daily administration of the State The Samiti, V M Apte holds,²⁵ is an august assembly of a larger group of people for the discharge of political business, while the Sabhā is a more select body, less popular and political in character The scholars may be aware that in the days of the *Rāmāyana* the emperor Dasaratha had to convene the session of the Samiti for an unanimous recommendation of Rāma's crowning as Prince Regent²⁶ Here, of course, the Samiti comprised all the feudal kings under the emperor as the members and the emperor himself as the lord

The members of the Samiti point out of the grievances of the people to the king. They are erudite, well to do and popular as well. They represent the people in the truest sense. A member can hardly make his mark in both the Sabhā and the Samiti if devoid of gift of the gab and proficiency in debate.²⁷ The members of the Samiti like their counterparts in the Sabhā also await the King's arrival with eagerness. Here, too, the King is the lord, and he enters the assembly in the most befitting manner—with all pomps and grandeur.²⁸ Here, however, he is no longer a comrade, and therefore, he cannot readily inflict defeat upon them. In a Sabhā the members are all friendly, and belong to the king's side. They are comrades and as such they never transgress the king's pleasure. But it is not the same with the Samiti.²⁹ Here all the pleasures of the king, if devoid of merits are scarcely considered to be final and binding. He can hardly turn a deaf ear to the peoples' representatives for redressing their grievances within the limited resources of the State.

The King is supposed to perform his duties in harmony with both the Houses. The Welfare of the kingdom depends very much on their mutual understanding and co-operation. Although the members of the Sabhā are nominated by the King they barely lag behind to advise the latter as their counterparts in the Samiti do in matters of public welfare. Thus the functions of both the Houses are almost identical. Perhaps, this is why the Houses are called twin daughters of Prajāpati.³⁰ This further suggests the high esteem enjoyed by the members of both the Houses. The Assemblies are regarded, A. S. Altekar³¹ holds almost as divine institutions of greatest antiquity co-evelly existing with the dawn of political life of the community. Notwithstanding that the King is the Chairman himself of both the Houses, these along with the Office of the Purohita or the Prime Minister exercise considerable authority acting as healthy checks on the arbitrary powers of the King.³²

REFERENCES

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1 <i>Rk. Samhitā</i> | VI 28 6 VIII 4 9 etc |
| 2 <i>Ibid</i> | X 191 3 etc |
| 3 <i>Āitareya Brāhmaṇa</i> | I 3 2 VIII 38 3 VIII 39 7 |
| 4 Jayarāma's Commentary on <i>Paraskara</i> | III 121 cf. Sāha dharmena sadbhir va |
| 5 <i>Gṛhya Sūtra</i> | bhāṣitī sabhā |
| 6 <i>Atharva Samhitā</i> | III 29 1 VII 12 2 XIX 55 5 Vedic |
| 7 <i>Macdonell & Keith</i> | <i>Index of Names and Subjects</i> (London |
| | 1912 Vol II p 430) |
| 8 <i>Rk. Samhitā</i> | • II 24 13 |
| 9 <i>Ibid</i> | IV 2 5 |
| 10 <i>Macdonell & Keith</i> | Op cit |
| 11 <i>Vajasaneyi Samhitā</i> | XXII 22 |
| 12 <i>Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa</i> | III 8 13 3 |
| 13 <i>Satapatha Brāhmaṇa</i> | XIII 1 9 8 |

- 11 Sāṅkhyāyana Śrautasūtra VIII 18 1
 12 Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa : III 8 13 3
 13 Vājasaneyi Samhita . XVI 24
 Taittirīya Samhita . IV 5 3 2
 Kāthaka Samhitā : XVII 13
 14 Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa : III 7 4 6
 15 Mukherji, R K : Hindu Civilization (Bombay, 1950), Ch.
 V, P 104
 16 Ibid :
 17 Aitareya Brāhmaṇa . I 3 2
 18 Ibid :
 19 Ibid :
 20 Rk Samhita : X 71 10
 Cf sarve nandanti yasaśagatena sa-
 bhasāhena sakhya sakhyayā
 21 Macdonell & Keith : Op cit.
 22 Jayaswal, K P : Hindu Polity (Bangalore, 1967) Part I,
 Ch III, p 18
 X 191 3
 23 Rk Samhita
 24 Ibid :
 25 Apte, V M : "Political and Legal Institutions", The
 Vedic Age (Bombay, 1965) Ch XVIII,
 pp 356-57
 : II 2 1-22
 26 Rāmāyana : India of the Age of the Brahmanas
 27 Basu, J R : (Calcutta, 1969) Book II, Ch III,
 p 113
 : IX 92 6
 V 19 15
 cf Nasma samitiḥ kalpate
 cf sabha ca na samitiscavatam pra-
 jāpaterduhitaraṁ samvidane
 30 Ibid, VII 13 1 : State and Government in Ancient
 India (Delhi, 1958), Ch VII, p 140
 31 Altekar, A S :
 32 Apte, V M : Op cit
-

KAIYATA AND HIS WORK

By

PERI SARVESWARA SHARMA

In the field of Sanskrit grammar, Pāṇini's work, the *Aṣṭādhyāyī* is complete with Kātyāyana's *Vārttikas* and Patañjali's *Mahābhāṣya*. Pāṇini, Kātyāyana and Patañjali are called *munitraya* of grammar. Among the works of *munitraya*, the *Mahābhāṣya* is considered to be the highest authority (*yathottaraṃ munināṃ prāmāṇyam*)¹

Kaiyata's *Mahābhāṣyapradīpa* is the only extant commentary on the entire *Mahābhāṣya*. Nāgesabhaṭṭa's *Mahābhāṣyapradīpoddhṛta* is a commentary on the *Mahābhāṣyapradīpa* and it is not a direct commentary on the *Mahābhāṣya*. Kaiyata has earned a great respect for his commentary.

Kaiyata's date — Kaiyata has mentioned nowhere in his work when he lived and composed his commentary. In one of the introductory verses to his commentary, he simply mentions that his father's name is Jayyata and his teacher is called Mahesvara². Ruyyaka quotes the following verse from Kaiyata's work in his *Alankarasarvasvam* "bhāṣyābद्धिḥ kvātigambhīra" *utyādaḥ draṣṭavyam* (See *Alankarasarvasvam*, Kāvya-mālā edn 1893, p 202 14-15). This is the first pāda of introductory verse No 6 composed by Kaiyata to his commentary³. Ruyyaka has composed his work *Alankarasarvasvam* between 1135-1150 A D⁴.

Again, Mahendrasūri, a direct student of Hemacandra, commenting on Hemacandra's *Anekārthasamgraha*, has quoted the following introductory verse from Kaiyata's *Pradīpa* "padavakyapramāṇāṃ pāram yatasya dhimataḥ". This is the first half of the introductory verse No 4 composed by Kaiyata to his commentary⁵.

1 See Kaiyata's commentary and Bhaṭṭojidīkṣita's *Siddhantaśaṅkha* on 'na bahuvrīhaḥ' (Pāṇini 1.1.29). It is a remarkable thing here that the author of *Kaśikavṛtti* as well as his two commentators namely Jinendrabuddhi and Haradatta have written nothing in this regard. They do not talk of *sūtrapratyākhyāna* (refutation of the sūtra namely na bahuvrīhaḥ) at all.

2 padavakyapramāṇāṃ pāram yatasya dhimataḥ /
guror Mahesvarasyāpi kṛtvā caranarandanam ||4||
Mahābhāṣyapradīpapravāṇam evirupavāṇam /
yathāgamanā tīdhāṣye haṃ Kaiyata Jayatātmanah ||5||
3 bhāṣyābद्धिḥ kvātigambhīrah kvāham mandamatīḥ tātah /
chaitrāṇāṃ upaśāṣṭavyam yasyāṃ pūṣṇātmanāṃ ||6||

4 See p 285 4 5 History of Sanskrit Poetics by P V Kane third revised edition 1961

5 See Hemacandra's *Anekārthasamgraha* extracts from the Commentary p 106 19 Bombay 1893

of the opinion that Haradatta is posterior to Kaiyaṭa I am of the opinion that Haradatta is prior to Kaiyaṭa To prove this I have certain external evidence which I would like to produce here Dharmakīrti directly refers to Haradatta in his work called *Rūpāvatāra* — “*kun sabde — ākūta itī vedalokaprayogadarśanād dīrghānta evāyaṃ Haradattābhūmataḥ* /¹²” He has nowhere mentioned Kaiyaṭa directly or indirectly And Maitreyarākṣita refers to *Rūpāvatāra* in his work called *Dhātupradīpa* “*Rūpāvatāre tu nīlope pratya-yotpat-teḥ prag eva kṛte saty ekāctvāt yan udāhṛtaś cocuryate itī* /”¹³

Now, according to S C Chakravartī, Kaiyaṭa lived at about 1050 A D and Maitreyarākṣita at about 1100 A D and Dharmakīrti, the author of the *Rūpāvatāra* early in the 11th century But he places Haradatta after Kaiyaṭa stating “Again Haradatta often indirectly speaks of Kaiyaṭa and appears to have lived in 1100 A D Haradatta, Maitreyarākṣita and Puruṣottamadeva appear to have been co-eval as no one of them refers to the others”¹⁴ This statement of Chakravartī seems to us to be contradictory Because, Maitreyarākṣita refers to Dharmakīrti and Dharmakīrti again refers to Haradatta as I have shown above When Dharmakīrti might have lived early in the 11th century, say at about 1030 A D or so, then, Haradatta, whom Dharmakīrti refers to by name, must have lived still earlier In that case, how can he be posterior to Kaiyaṭa But one thing is clear to us Here, Prof S C Chakravartī is not to be blamed for this He was not aware of the fact that Haradatta was referred to in the *Rūpāvatāra* Had he known this fact he would not have written like that Other external evidence to prove that Haradatta was prior to Kaiyaṭa is as follows — Bhaṭṭojidīkṣita makes the following statements in his work *Śabdakaustubha* — “*yat tu ūḍidam* ” (p 6 1 171) *itī sūtre Haradattenoktam ‘iḥa “antodāt-tāt”* (P 6 1 169) *itī anuvṛttisāmarthyat “sav ekācaḥ”* (P 6 1 168) *ity api na pravartate / na ca sav ekāca itī sūtrastha Kaiyata-paryālocanayā iṣṭāptīr itī vācyaṃ / anye tu itī vadatā Kaiyatena tanmate ‘svarasāviskaranāt (tadbhāṃ tu bahutaravaidīkaprayoga-virodha eva) /* (*Śabdakaustubha* Vol II p 279 13 29, Chowkhamba Sanskrit Series, 1929) The idea is that Haradatta’s statement that by bringing the word *antodatta* from the *sūtra* 6 1 169 by *anuvṛtti* (further application) even the *sūtra sav ekācaḥ* does not apply here in the case of *ūḍidam* cannot be accepted as correct, because Kaiyaṭa commenting on *sav ekācaḥ* has shown his disagreement by using the word *anye tu* (others) The reason for this is that the

12 See p 157 6-7 Part II of *Rupavatara* of Dharmakīrti ed by M B Varadaraj-jengar Bangalore 1960 24

13 See p 131 6-7 *Dhātupradīpa* ed by S C Chakravartī Rajshahi 1919

14 The *Kaśika Vivarana Panjika* Vol I ed by S C Chakravartī Rajshahi Bengal, 1913-1916 see Introduction p 22 1ff

opinion of Haradatta goes against many forms used in the Veda. From this statement of Bhaṭṭojidiksita it is quite clear that Kaiyaṭa was posterior to Haradatta. The second statement which proves the priority of Haradatta in the age is as follows — “*canpare nau yad angām tasya yo 'bhyāso laghuparas tasya sanvat laghor dirghas ceti Haradattādibhiḥ puraskṛte Kaiyaṭenaikīyamatenopanyaste vyākhyāne*” (See Śabdakaustubha, Part II p 337 11-13, Chowkhamba Sanskrit Series, 1929)

It means that scholars like Haradatta, etc. have forwarded the interpretation of the sūtra of Panini 7 4 93 in the above mentioned way but Kaiyaṭa showing his disagreement with that interpretation uses the word *ete* (others). This statement of Bhaṭṭojidiksita also indicates clearly the priority of Haradatta and posteriority of Kaiyaṭa. In the light of this fact the following statement made by S K Belvalkar in his work called “Systems of Sanskrit Grammar” must be treated as false. ‘According to a portion of *Bhaviṣyottara Purāṇa* giving the history of Haradatta (who is considered as an incarnation of God Śiva) we learn that he died 3979 years after the beginning of Kali, which corresponds to 878 A D. This account of the *Bhaviṣyottara Purāṇa* probably does not refer to our Haradatta, seeing that it gives Vasudeva as the name of Haradatta's father. Moreover, Haradatta's *Padamanjari* seems to be later than and partly based upon Kaiyaṭa's *Mahabhāṣya Pradīpa* and we cannot as sign to Kaiyaṭa so early a date as cir 800 A D which would be necessary if Haradatta is to be put at 878. Probably, Haradatta belongs to somewhere about 1100 A D’¹⁵

Now, according to me there is no harm even if we consider the story of Haradatta as given in the *Bhaviṣyottara Purāṇa* to be true and thus place him in the later part of the 9th century.

If it is so, cir 900 A D or the beginning of the 10th century can be put as a higher limit to Kaiyaṭa's date. Again, I have found in the *Mahabhāṣyapradīpa* certain clear indirect references to Helārāja, a commentator of Bhartṛhari's *Vakyaṭadīpa* (see Appendix III). Helārāja was probably one of the *Gurus* (teachers) of Abhinavagupta, a commentator of Bharata's *Nāṭyaśāstra*. Anandavarḍhana's *Dhvanyaloka* etc., who lived between 980-1020 A D.¹⁶ If this is so, cir 1050 to 1100 A D can be put as the higher limit to Kaiyaṭa's date. Thus the lower limit and the higher limit come near to each other or it can be said that they become the same. I think Kaiyaṭa's exact date has been fixed now.

15 ‘Systems of Sanskrit Grammar’ by S K Belvalkar Poona 1915 p 39 18ff and p 40ff

16 *The Kālasamuddesa of Bhartṛhari's Vakyaṭadīpa* by Perī Sarveswara Sharma published by Motilal Banarsidass First Edition 1972 Delhi Introduction pp 7-12

APPENDIX I

Kaiyaṭa's Commentary

"tad ucyate vṛttikāraih-
padāntarasyāprayujyamāna-
syārthah padārtha itī /"

(Commenting on M Bh on
1, 4, 95, p 295 29, M Bh.
Part II, Raghunāthaśāstrī's
edn 1935)

"iha vṛttikārā, asaṃjñā-
grahanam pratyayānta-
viśeṣanam, vyācakṣate /"

(Commenting on M Bh on
5, 1, 28, p 263 31, M Bh
Part IV, ed by Bhārgavasāstrī,
1942)

'vṛttikarair apy uktam —
nānāvācīnām adhikaranānām
kriyāguṇābhyām yugapat pra-
yoktur vyāptum icchā vipseti /"

(Commenting on M Bh on
8, 1, 4, p 21 10-11, M Bh
8th adhyāya, ed by
Śrīguruprasādasāstrī, 1938)

"tathā ca vṛttikārā āhuh —
yām kriyām kartā prādhānyena-
nuparaman karoti tan nityam /"

(Commenting on M Bh on
8, 1, 12, p 37 9 10, M Bh
8th adhyāya, ed by
Śrīguru 1938)

"kṣubdhā girinadim ivetya-
dayas tu prayogā aśādhava ity
āhuh / anye tūpamānena
sādhayanti /"

(Commenting on M Bh on
7, 2, 18, p 251 21-22,
Part I, Ānandāśrama,
edn. 1938)

"kecit tu, sāmānyapekṣayā
jñapakatvāśrayāl lunmātrasya
balavattvāśrayanena vya-
vahāradarśanāl lunmātram
bādhakam jñāpyata ity
āhuh /"

(Commenting on M Bh on
7, 2, 98, p 298 9-10, M Bh.
Part II, Ānandāśrama
edn 1938)

Kāśikāvṛtti

"padāntarasyāprayujyamāna-
syārthah padārthah /"
(Kāśikā on 1, 4, 95)

"pratyayāntasya viśeṣanam
asaṃjñāgrahanam na cet pra-
tyayantam saṃjñeti /"
(Kāśikā on 5, 1, 28)

"nānāvācīnām adhikaranānām
kriyāguṇābhyām yugapat pra-
yoktur vyāptum icchā vīpsā /"
(Kāśikā on 8, 1, 4)

"yām kriyām kartā prādhānyena-
nuparaman karoti tan nityam /"
(Kāśikā on 8, 1, 4)

"kṣubhitam manthena, kṣubdho
grih, nadity evamādy upamānād
bhaviṣyati /"
(Kāśikā on 7, 2, 18)

"etaḥ eva tarhy ādesavacanam
jñapakam antarangān api
vidhūn bahirango lūg bādhata
iti / jñāpakarthe hy etasmin
bahutaram iṣṭam saṃgrhyate /"
(Kāśikā on 7, 2, 98)

Kaiyaṣa's Commentary

"anye tu yathātathāśabdayoh
sup supeti samāsa etadartha
ity āhuh /"

(Commenting on M Bh on
7, 3, 31, p 337 15, M Bh
Part II, Ānanda 1938)

"ke cit tu pañca brāhmanya
ityādaḥ "na ṣaṣvasarādibhya"
iti tāppratishedhāya ṣaṣsamjñā-
yām nalopasyasiddhatvam
ucyate ity āhuh /"

(Commenting on M Bh on
8, 2, 2, p 481 19 20, M Bh
8th adhyāya, ed by
Śrīguru 1938)

"atrāhuh —yatra dvav api
nimittanimittau samānapada-
sthatvaṃ vyabhicaratas tatra
natvābhāvaḥ / iha tu rephasya
vyabhicāre 'pi nakārasya
samānapadasthatvāvyabhi-
cārān natvaṃ
pravartate /"

(Commenting on M Bh on
8, 4, 3, p 215 22, p 216 19-20,
M Bh 8th adhyāya ed by
Śrīguru 1938)

Kāśikāvṛtti

"bhāṣye tu yathādarśitam
ayathātathābhāva itī tathā
sup supeti samāso lakṣyate /"
(Kāśikā on 7, 3, 31)

"pañca brāhmanyo daśa brāhmanya
iti nalopasyasiddhatvāt śnāntā
ṣaḍ iti ṣaṣsamjñā bhavati /
tataś ca na ṣaṣvasarādibhya
iti tāpāh pratishedho bhavati /"
(Kāśikā on 8, 2, 2)

"samāsapade 'pi hi samānapade
nimittanimittau bhāvād asti -
pūrvena prapti itī / sa ca
nyamāḥ purvapadasambandhād
uttarapadasthasyaiva natvaṃ
nivartayati carmanāsika itī,
na taddhṛtapurvapadasthasya /
kharapāyanah /"
(Kāśikā on 8, 4, 3)

APPENDIX II

Kaiyaṭa's Commentary

"saṃyogāntaloṇo na syād, iti ke cid āhuh/"
(Commenting on M Bh on 6, 3, 68, p 252. 5-6, M Bh Part V, ed by Bhārgava, 1945)

tadantata grhyata iti manyamānā matupo grahanam vyācakṣate /"
(Commenting on M Bh on 6, 4, 14, p 280 7-9r, M Bh. Part V, ed by Bhārgava 1945)

"anye tv āhuh — svāśrayam api yathā syād ity evamarthaṃ vatkaranam /" (Commenting on M Bh on 6, 4, 22, p 285 25, M. Bh Part V, ed by Bhārgava 1945)

"ke cit tu — yogavibhāgene-
ṣṭasiddhim āhuh / gameh sakā-
rād id bhavaty eko yogah /
tatah parasmaipadeṣv iti dvitīyo
yogo niyamārthah / tulya-
jātiyapekṣatvāc ca niyamasyā-
tmanepadaṇiṣaya even nivart-
yata iti kṛti parasmaipadaluki
caḍ bhavaty eva, jigamiṣitum,
jigamiṣitavyam, jigamiṣatvam
iti /" (Commenting on M Bh
on 7, 2, 58, p 275 15-18,
M Bh Part II, ānanda edn
1938)

"ke cit tu vyācakṣate — yady
ādeśāntarānām tvamau bādha-
kau syatām tadā maparyanta-
grahānānuvṛttim antarenotsarga-
amānadesatvād apavadānām

Jinendrabuddhi's Nyāsa

"tadāśrayane tu saṃyogāntaloṇo
na syāt /" (Kāśikāvivaranaṇapañjikā
on Kāśikāvṛtti on 6, 3, 68,
p 464-7, kāśikāvivarana ed by
S G C Chakravarti 1919)

"antagrahane ca saty antagraha
nasāmarthyād atvantamātragra-
hane vijñāyamāne yo hy upadeṣe
prayogaikadeśabhūtas tasyāpi
grahanam bhavaty upapadyate
matupo grahanam /" (Kāśikāvi-
varana on Kāśikā on 6, 4, 14,
p 513 13-15, Kāśikāvivarana
Part II, ed by S C Chakravarti,
1919)

"tat kriyate kva cit svāśrayam api
siddham yathā syād iti /"
(Kāśikāvivarana on Kāśikā on
6 4, 22, p 525 2, Kāśikāvivarana
ed by S C Chakravarti, 1919)

'yogavibhāgah kartavyah /
gameh id ity eko yogah / tatra sa
ity anuvartate / sakāradav ārdha-
dhātuke gameh idāgamo bhavati /
tatah parasmaipadeṣv iti dvitīyo
yogo niyamārthah / sa cayan
niyamo yady avisesena syat tadā
purvayogo 'narthakah syāt /
tasmāt tulyajātiyapeksaya niya-
mah / tulyajātiyas ca tin / tin-
viṣaye yady bhavati tada para-
smaipadeṣv eva / nātmanepadeṣv
iti / tena kṛti parasmaipadaluki
ca pūrvayogena bhavaty eva /
niyamenavyāvartitatvād iti /"
(Kāśikāvivarana on (Kāśikā on
7, 2, 58, p 734 9-14, Kāśikāvi-
varana ed by S C Chakravarti,
1925)

"yady cādeśāntarānām bādha-

Kaṇḍikā's Commentary

maparyantasya tvamau siddhāv
 itī kim tadanuvṛtīyā / anuvṛtīyā
 tu jñāpyate prāg eva luki krte
 vibhaktiyabhāvād asatsv ādeśān-
 tareṣu tvamau vidhīyeta itī /
 tad ayuktam /" (Commenting
 on M Bh on 7, 2, 98, p 298
 12-15, M Bh Part II, ānanda
 edn 1938)

"dīrghocārane bhāṣyakāreṇa
 pratyākhyāte ke cit praśleṣa-
 nīrdesena dvītiya ikāro "ye ca
 vibhāṣyeta" ātvasya pakṣe para-
 tvāt prāptasya bādhanārtham
 ity ahuḥ / tad ayuktam /"
 (Commenting on M Bh on
 3, 1, 111, p 146 10-13, M Bh
 Part III, ed by Raghu 1937)

' ke cit tu — anītyam āgama-
 sāsanaṃ ity asya jñāpakam
 vāgrahaṇam varṇayanti / anī-
 tyatvāt tasyā hy asatī dadād
 itī na syād itī tatsiddhaye
 vāgrahaṇam kriyamānam enām
 paribhāṣam jñāpayati /"
 (Commenting on M Bh on
 7, 3, 70, p 375 15-17, M Bh
 Part II, ānanda, edn 1938)

Jinendrabuddhi's Nyāsa

maparyantasyaiva prayuktānī /
 nānyasya / tataś cāntareṇāpi
 maparyantagrahaṇānūvṛttim
 utsargasamānadesatvad
 apavādānām maparyantasyaiva
 bhaviṣyeta itī kim maparyan-
 tasyety anuvartanena / ādeśān-
 tarānām abādhanārthe hy etasmin
 sarvādeśanuvṛttiyartham mapar-
 yantagrahaṇam anuvartayitūṃ
 yuktam / tasmād etasmān
 maparyantagrahaṇānūvartanān
 nādeśāntarabādhanam asya
 prayojanam / ato jñāpakam
 vijñāyate /" (Kāśikāvivarana on
 Kāśikā on 7, 2, 98, p 759 2-8,
 Kāśikāvivarana Part III, ed by
 S C Chakravartī, 1925)

"dvayor ikārayoh praśleṣanīrde-
 śah / tatra yo dvītiya ivaṇah sa
 ye cety āttvabādha yathā syād ity
 evam arthah" (Kāśikāvivarana
 on Kāśikā on 3, 1, 111, p 573
 2-3, Kāśikāvivarana. Part I, ed by
 S C Chakravartī, 1916)

"anītyatā punar āgamasāsanasya
 gher lopo leṭī vā (7, 3, 70) ity
 atra vagrahaṇāl lūgād vijñāyate /
 tad dhi dadat, dadād ity atra
 nītyam gher lopo mā bhūḍ ity
 evamartham kriyate /" (Kāśikā-
 vivarana on Kāśikā on 7, 1, 1,
 p 615 4-6, Kāśikāvivarana Part
 III, ed by S C Chakravartī
 1925)

Kaṇḍa's commentary

anye tv āhuh — mīyate 'nāyeti
mātrā saṃkhyocyate / samāhā-
radvandve napuṃsakatvāc ca
hrasvatvaṃ kṛtam / tenābhū-
hitāyām api saṃkhyāyām
prathamā bhavati /"
(Commenting on M Bh on 2, 3,
46, p 515 24-27r, Part II,
M Bh ed by Raghu 1935)

"devadatta pac l iti sthite
yāvat tina utpattir nāsti
tāvat tinsamānādhikaranyā-
bhavāt prathamaiveti nīya-
mābhāvād devadattaśabdād
aviśeṣavihitāḥ sarve svādayah
sthitā iti laṭah sthāne dvitīyād-
yantapadasāmānādhikaranye
vidhīyamānau śatṛśānacau prāp-
nuto na tu tinah / teṣāṃ tu
lānādir avakāśas tadviśaya eva
ca prathamāyā api karmaṇi
dvitīyaivety arthanīyame
dvitīyādīnām atra sadbhāva iti
manyante /" (Commenting on
M Bh on 2, 3, 46, p 517 23-29,
M Bh Part II, ed by Raghu
1935)

anye tv āhuh — anīrdhārīta-
viśeṣadharmanibandhanā kutsā
kutsitaśabdapravṛttinimittam,
brahmahatyādiviśeṣanibandhanā
kutsā tu pratyayanibandha-
nam /" (Commenting on B Bh
on 5, 3, 74, p 397 25 27r,
M Bh Part IV, ed by
Bhārgava 1942)

rasāḥ sarve madhuny avibhā-
genāvasthita evam upasarja-
nārthe saṃkhyaviśeṣāḥ /"
(Commenting on M Bh on 6 3,
1, p 213 6 8r, M Bh Part V,
ed by Bhārgava. 1945)¹

*Helārāja's commentary on the
Vākyapadīya*

"mīyate 'nāyeti mātrā saṃkhyā /
tasyāḥ samāhāradvandvena
nirdeśah tatra saṃkhyāyām
abhihitāyām ekādibhyo yathā
syād iti mātragrahanasya prayo-
janaṃ vacanagrahaṇenaiva sid-
dham iti anyatarac chakyam akar-
tum ity uktam bhāṣye /" (Com-
menting on Vāk 3, 7, 163, p 366
24, p 367. 1-2, Poona edn 1963)

"iha vibhajyānvākhyānapakṣe
devadatta pac l iti sthite
yāvat tina utpattir nāsti tāvat
tinsamānādhikaranatvābhavāt
prathamā na prāpnoti / tathā
ca devadattaśabdād aviśeṣavihitāḥ
sarve svādayah sthitā iti laṭah
sthāne dvitīyādyantapada-
sāmānādhikaranye vidhīyamānau
śatṛśānacau prāpnuto 'pavāda-
bhūtau, na tu tinah / teṣāṃ tu
lānādir avakāśo bhavet / sa eva
ca prathamāyā apīti pacati
devadatta iti laṭasamanādhikaraṇaḥ
prayogaḥ prathamānto na syāt /"
(Commenting on Vāk. 3, 7, 163,
p 364 7-12, Poona edn 1963)

"tathā cānīrdhārītadharmanavi-
śeṣanibandhanakutsa kutsita-
śabdapravṛttinimittam,
brahmahatyādiviśeṣanibandhanā
tu kapratyayahefetur iti
viśeṣah /" (Commenting on
Vāk 3, 14, 4, p 3 22-24,
Trivandram edn 1942)

"tathāiva yathānimittam
saṃkhyābhedāvasāyād upasar-

rasāḥ sarve madhuny avibhā-
genāvasthita evam upasarja-
nārthe saṃkhyaviśeṣāḥ /"
(Commenting on Vāk. 3, 14,
100, p 53 25 27, Trivandram
edn 1942)

¹ Here Kaṇḍa using the words "yathauśadhirasāḥ sarve definitely referred to Helārāja alone as the Karika on which Helārāja commented begins with "yathauśadhirasāḥ sarve" (vak 3 14 100 Triv edn 1942)

THE DATE OF BHĀGAVATA PURĀNA

By

JAWAHAR LAL SHARMA

Bhāgavata Purāna is the most popular among all the Purānas but the problem of determining its date yet remains a complicated one

On the one hand scholars like V R R Dikshitar¹ have persisted in proving it a work of remote antiquity of 3rd cen. A D, and on the other Macdonell², Burnouff³, and Wilson⁴, etc have gone to the other extreme, placing it in the 13th cen A D by attributing its authorship to Bopadeva. Thus a fresh appraisal of the date of Bhāgavata Purana becomes necessary

Going into the details of internal and external evidences of Bhāgavata Purāna it becomes fairly certain that it is a work of 6th cen A D. It is a work of an age when the tradition of devotionism had been well established and had reached its culmination. The contribution of the Alwar saints⁵ of the South, 'Bhagavad viṣaya' or the traditionally called 'Tamil veda' served as a strong and vital background to it. Bhagavata Purāna is a work of the Tamil country⁶. The geographical data furnished in the Purāna and the fact it describes the south as a land of sanctity and holiness⁷, prove the above statement. The Purāna is of the same age as that of the Alwars

It is apparent from the study of Bhagavata Purāna that it is a work of an age when peace and prosperity prevailed everywhere and the renaissance of Hindu religion had reached its culmination through theistic devotionism. That is why even Śankara, though not emphasising devotionism in his theoretical expositions, could not remain uninfluenced by it (Bhakti), as is evident from his various stotras

1 Purāna Index Vol. I pp. xviii-xxx.

2 Macdonell History of Sanskrit Literature pp 253-254

3 Introduction of Bh. P ed Burnouff

4 See Winternitz, History of Indian Literature (Eng Trans) Vol I p 535

5 (i) R Mukherjee The Lord of the Autumn Moons pp 65-66

(ii) J N Farquhar Outline of the Religious Literature of India p 233.

6 (i) K A Nilakanta Sastri History of South India p 342.

(ii) T J Hopkins article 'The Social Teachings of the Bhāgavata Purāna' Krishna Myths Rites & Attitudes ed M Singer p 5

(iii) J N Farquhar opp cited

7 Bh P 11 5 39 11 25 39-40

The tradition of Hindu renaissance too, like the old Vedic religion, was based on three phases of Upāsana, Karma and Jñāna. Upāsana is to be found in the Samhitās, the ritual performances in the Brāhmanas, and the Jñāna in the Upaniṣads. All these three phases can be visualised in this age of renaissance too. First is sown the tradition of devotionism among Alwars, which fructified in the nectar-like work Bhāgavata Purāṇa. Then came a Mīmāṃsaka of great eminence like Kumārila in the tradition of Karma and finally an unparalleled talent like Śaṅkara in the tradition of Jñāna.

In no way can any date earlier than 500 A D be assigned to Bhāgavata Purāṇa, which deals with the biography of Kṛṣṇa in much more details than the Viṣṇu and Harivamśa Purāṇas dated 400 A D⁸. All the scholars are unanimous on Bhāgavata Purāṇa's being a later work than the Viṣṇu and Harivamśa⁹.

Dikshitar's assertion¹⁰ of placing it in the 3rd cen A D seems quite paradoxical. His supposition of the Guptas' bearing the title of 'Parama bhāgavata' is not an evidence strong enough to prove Bhāgavata Purāṇa being pre-existent and the formers' adhering to the title not on the basis of Bhāgavata religion, which was patronised by that dynasty, but the sacred book Bhāgavata Purāṇa. His other arguments too viz the propitiation of Varāha as an incarnation of Viṣṇu being given prominence by the Guptas and the Bhāgavata Purāṇa as well, certainly lead us to no definite conclusion. The same way presuming that Bhāgavata Purāṇa was composed after the disappearance of 'Sankarāṣana cult' which was prevalent from 6th cen B C to the 3rd cen A D, and Vāsudeva-worship being prominent in Bhāgavata Purāṇa, also gains no ground as the 'Sankarāṣana-vyūha' is a very antique doctrine of the Pāñcarātras and the Bhāgavatas both, and it has been mentioned in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa¹¹ too.

Inclusion of Buddha and Rṣabhadeva¹² the Jain Tirthankara, in the list of the incarnations of Viṣṇu in Bhāgavata Purāṇa, also leads us to conjecture that it had been a work of an age when these two heterodox religions were not completely swept away from India. Kumārila the renowned Mīmāṃsaka of his time has criticised this attitude of the Purāṇas in his commentary on Jaimini Sūtra¹³. This clearly indicates Bhāgavata Purāṇa's being earlier than Kumārila,

8 R C Hazra Purāṇics Records on Hindu Rites & Customs, p 55 Wintennitz History of Indian Literature Vol. I p. 557

9 Ibid Macdonell History of Sanskrit Literature p. 253 254

10 V R R. Dikshitar Purāṇa Index, Vol. I pp xxviii-xxx

11 Bh. P 3 26 21 23.

12 Bh P 1 3 24 1 3 13 2 7 10

13 'Smāryante ca purāṇeṣu dharmā-viplava hetavaḥ
līlau sahyadayaś-tesam ko vakyam srotum-arhati'
Kumārila's comm on Jaimini Sūtra 1 3 1

otherwise to do away with the criticism launched by the former, the latter would have certainly ignored Buddha and R̥ṣabha. Thus Bhāgavata Purāṇa precedes Kumārila, who was an older contemporary to Śaṅkara.

According to B N K. Sharma¹⁴ and Baladeva Upadhyaya¹⁵ Bhāgavata Purāṇa precedes Gauḍapāda. Baladeva Upadhyaya points out the following śloka of Bhāgavata Purāṇa quoted in the Uttara gītā bhāṣya of Gauḍapāda —

*Śreyah śrutim bhaktim-udasya te vibho,
klīṣyanti ye kevala-bodha labdhaye
Teṣām-asau kleśala eva śiṣyate,
nānyad yathā sthūla-tuṣāvaghātīnām* Bh P 10 14 4

Besides it, Gauḍapāda has quoted another śloka 'Jagrahe pauruṣam rūpam' (Bh P 1 3 1) in his 'Pañcīkarana-cyākhyana'.¹⁶ Thus obviously Bhāgavata Purāṇa belongs to a date earlier than that of Gauḍapāda i.e. 7th cen A D. Yet we need certain more evidences as the authenticity of Gauḍapāda's Uttara gītā bhāṣya is not accepted by many scholars.

Dr R C Hazra too has placed it in the 6th cen A D¹⁷ on two grounds — (1) 'The Bhāgavata is earlier than the Viṣṇuīte Kūrma P which was unlike the Bhāgavata much influenced by Śākta ideas. The date of Viṣṇuīte Kūrma P is to be placed between 550 and 650 A D¹⁷ and (ii) in 'Bhāgavata Purāṇa the biography of Kṛṣṇa is in much greater details than in Viṣṇu P and Harivamśa also. The latter being dated about 400 A D, the Bhāgavata cannot possibly be earlier than about 500 A D. Thus the date of Bhāgavata falls in the sixth century A D¹⁸'

The historical reference to the Hunas adopting Bhāgavata religion in Bhāgavata Purāṇa,¹⁹ as pointed out by Dr S Bhattacharya²⁰ proves it a work of Gupta period possibly not earlier than A D 500.

The culture as depicted in Bhāgavata Purāṇa too indicates it to be a work of Gupta period. But there follows a question why the Gupta dynasty has not been mentioned in the dynastic list of Kālī era in Bhāgavata Purāṇa. Baladeva Upadhyaya²¹ is of the opinion

14 Gauḍapāda having flourished in the 7th century A D it follows that Bhāgavata was much earlier than this date! ABORI Vol XIV p 216

15 Baladeva Upadhyaya Purāṇa Vimarśa pp 547 548

16 Ibid

17 History & Culture of Indian People (Classical Age) p 259

17a Puranic Record on Hindu Rites & Customs p 55

18 Ibid

19 Bh P 2 4 18

20 S Bhattacharya The Philosophy of Śrīmad Bhagavata Vol I p xi

21 Purāṇa Vimarśa pp 336 397

that the Guptas were not deemed worthy of being given any importance by the composers of the Purāṇas. This view is but not appealing, as Guptas played a very vital role in the propagation of the Bhāgavata religion. However some scholars²² have tried to prove a reference to the Guptas in the following verse of Bhāgavata Purāṇa —

*Anugangām-āprayāgām guptām bhokshyate mahīm*²³

Whereas the word 'guptām' in the above verse is used as an adjective of 'Mahīm', and in no way it points at the Gupta dynasty. No mention of Guptas in Bhāgavata Purāṇa is certainly a very significant question, as even the patronisers of heterodox religions like Nandas and Mauryas have been mentioned in it²⁴. The only convincing solution, therefore, may be that Bhāgavata Purāṇa was composed during the Gupta period. As already mentioned religion and society depicted in Bhāgavata Purāṇa is undoubtedly the religion and society of Gupta period. It would be quite humiliating the Guptas, should there have been a passing note on Gupta emperors. And mention of any individual Gupta emperor would not have been in tune with the temperament and nature of the Purāṇas. Thus Bhāgavata Purāṇa belongs to an era when the Gupta dynasty had not become the subject of History but it was contemporary to it.

It would not be undesirable to quote certain more evidences to prove Bhāgavata Purāṇa a work earlier than Śāṅkara. On the basis of the following verse of Śāṅkara in his 'Prabodha sudhakara' Baladeva Upadhyaya²⁵ proves the indebtedness of Śāṅkara to Bhāgavata —

*'Ka api ca kṛṣṇāyanti kasyā-scit putanāyantyāh
apibat stanam iti sākṣad-vyāso nārāyaṇaḥ prāha'*—Śāṅkara

'Kasya scit pūtanāyantyāḥ kṛṣṇayantya-pibat stanam'

—Bhāgavata

Reference of 'Vyūha' principle in the Brahma sutra-commentary by Śāṅkara²⁶ also suggest Bhāgavata Purāṇa as pre-existent. Though the word 'Bhāgavatāḥ' in the Śāṅkara's Commentary indicates the sect and not the book, the principle mentioned therein is the same as mentioned in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa. The 'Vyūha' doctrine mentioned by Śāṅkara is entirely different from that of 'Pañcarātras'²⁷. It is but the same doctrine as mentioned in Bhāgavata

²² 'Some Notes & Observations on the Puranic Accounts of the Imperial Guptas' article by S. N. Roy in Purana Bulletin Vol. XII No. 2 pp. 265

²³ Bh. P. 12.1.37

²⁴ Bh. P. 12.1.

²⁵ Purāṇa Vimarśa pp. 118-119

²⁶ Brahma-sūtra Śāṅkara-bhāṣya 2.2.42-45

²⁷ Ahirbudhnyā Samhitā 5.7-60

Purāṇa.²⁸ This evidence, therefore, clearly indicates Bhāgavata Purāṇa as preceding to Śaṅkara.

Keeping the above mentioned evidences in mind, it is not unconvincing to conclude that Bhāgavata Purāṇa is a work of an earlier age than that of Śaṅkara and Kumārila, and its date falls in the 6th cen A.D. However amendations and interpolations were made in it later on many a time,²⁹ and those too were made with such a skill and care that now it is very difficult to detect them

²⁸ Bh P 3 26 21-28.

²⁹ Cf. P. Sastri 'The Purāṇas', JBORS, Part III

BHĀSA - A JVALANA-MITRA

By

PRAVIN V MEHTA

Rājaśekhara in his 'Sūktimuktāvalī' says भासनाटकत्रेऽपि ह्येवं क्षिप्ते परीक्षितुम् । स्वप्नवासवदत्तस्य दाहवोऽभून्न पावकः । In the commentary of Jonārāja on the 'पृथ्वीराज' there is a passage दीप्तानि वह्नेरपि मानसानि भासस्य वाग्यं सन्तु विष्णुधर्मान् ॥ etc.

Thus we find that Bhāsa is associated with Fire by the above authors. But the more striking reference to Bhāsa's connection with fire is found in Vākpatirāja who flourished in the 8th century. In his 'Gaudvaho' (verse 800) he has termed Bhāsa as जलणमित्त (भासे ज्वलनमित्ते हुन्तीदेवे च यस्य रघुकरे । सोढव्ये च वघे च हारीचद्र च आनन्द ॥ an epithet extremely appropriate for the plays of Bhāsa. It is singularly attributed to Bhāsa and there is no author to whom this epithet is applied. From the context of this epithet it is known why Vākpatirāja has called him a 'Friend of Fire'.

Many scholars have written voluminous works on this celebrated poet of Sanskrit literature, but none of them has so far pursued the matter to find out the real purpose behind this appellation. Since some have referred to this appellation, we shall first consider their views and then try to arrive at the importance of this epithet given to our author.

The following are the plausible interpretations given for the word 'Jvalana-mitra'.

- i. There might be a person 'Jvalana' by name, a contemporary and friend of Bhāsa and he might be so well reputed that Vākpati might have been inclined to give the above epithet. But this interpretation can hardly be said to be convincing as nothing is reliably known about Jvalana.
- ii. Prof. A. B. Keith and Dr. Pusalkar are of the opinion that since the Lāvāṇaka fire is introduced in the play 'Svapna-vāsavadattam,' our poet is termed a 'friend of fire'. "The play itself contains a fire, which was feigned by the minister to permit the possibility of the king's new marriage, and it is only appropriate that, as that fire could not burn the queen so the fire which tried the play was unable to

prevail against it The passage throws the necessary light on the term friend of fire of Vākpati....." (Prof A. B. Keith) To quote Dr. Pusalkar also, "the mention & description of conflagration..... are sufficient, it is to justify the epithet." But this view is not tenable Why should we at all call him a 'friend of fire' only on the ground that he brings about a conflagration scene in one of his plays? In Act IV of 'Ratnāvalī,' we find that Harṣa has introduced a similar scene. It is a mere assumption of Prof Lévi that Harṣa is indebted to Bhāsa for this scene. The credit for the conflagration-motive lies neither with Harṣa, nor with Bhāsa, but with 'Bṛhat-Kathā." The episode is taken bodily out of 'Kathāsarit-Sāgara', Chapter XVI. As observed by Albert Baston & M. Susali, differences of scenes are of trifling importance and they do not entitle either to be called a 'friend of fire' Hence, the second view based on forest-conflagration does not hold much water.

- 111 It is submitted that Bhāsa has frequently referred to fire in his plays After carefully going through all the plays the references to Fire can be conveniently classified under the following five heads

- (a) *Indirect Mention* - * Pratimā V/13b, Uru I/14a, 1/52/1, Pañcarātra III/8C
- (b) *Direct Mention* — D V I/32b, Pratijñā III/2/75, IV/16/1, Uru I/47a, Bāla, II/3b, D G. I/22C, I/30d, Abhū VI/ 22/4, VI/24b, 25b, & 26b, Avī IV/ 4b, & 5a, IV 6/IV/8/1 IV/15d VI/14/4 & 5 Svapna I/16b I/12/28, 34 & 37 IV/10, VI/11/10, VI/13b, Pañca I/17C
- (c) *As a standard of Comparison* Pratimā VI/3a, D V I/11c & 52b Pratijñā IV 11a, M V I/2/2 I/6c, 8c, 16b, 50/1, Uru I/6b, 4c, 17a, 43b, 56d, Bāl II/24d, IV/3a, & 4d, D G I/6b, 21b 36/11, Abhū I/13d II/1/15, III/8b IV/ 5 cd, VI /1a, 17b, KB)1/10, Avī, VI/9 b and Svapna V/—/31

* The references are to Poona Oriental series edition of Bhasa-nāṭakakram edited by Prof C R Devadhar (1962)

- (d) *Mention of fire as a god* DG 1/23d, Abhi VI /26/1, & 2, Entry of Agni from VI/26/1 Upto the end Avī, IV/12/28, 15/1 & 2 VI/ 1/37/ 38 & 39, 21/29.
- (e) *Sacrificial Fire* — MV I/52b, Pañch I/1a, 5/2, 6b, 70, 9b & d, 10a 11a, 13c, 14a 11/1 13 a & 16a

Dr A Banerji Sastri (JRAS 1921/p 379) & Prof Ghatak (SDL 12/pp 17 & 18) have given an almost complete list of references from the plays wherever the term occurs. They have arrived at the conclusion that 'Jvalana-Mitratva' is not simply because of Lāvānaka conflagration being introduced into the plot of Vāsavadattā but because of the poet's excess of zeal for introducing fire scenes, or talks or imageries about fire.

We agree that Bhāsa introduces fire not in any allegorical form, but as the god of fire itself at very possible opportunity with the direct references to Fire in 12 out of 13 plays and that he not only introduces Fire but often calls him by the very name with which he is associated in the verse quoted above.

But this view seems to be of not such a major importance so that Vākpatirāja should term him as a 'friend of fire'. We find similar references to Fire in the plays of other authors too. Of course the difference is of degree but that can be attributed to the numerical strength of the plays of our author. Manifold references to Fire do not prove, but only corroborate his 'Jvalana-mitratva'.

(iv) Now let us see the various purposes for which Bhāsa has utilised Fire in his plays. If we examine some of his plays, we find that fire is playing a pivotal role in them.

(a) We perhaps, do not find that any Sanskrit playwrights has ever brought any god in a human form on the stage, but Bhāsa has done it and done it purposefully in his 'Abhiṣeka'. In that play, Rāma wants to accept Sitā only if she is purified by Fire, otherwise she would be रजनिचरावमर्शजातबलमया इत्यादिबुल्लयाङ्कभूता । VI । २१ । १ (sullied by contact with the demon and has become a stain on Ikṣvāku's house). Now we know on the authority of Rāmāyana that Sitā was purified by Fire when she mounted the pyre. Bhāsa would have contended by making this announcement either from नेपथ्य or आकाशमावितम्. But, nay, he wants to bring a better effect by bringing the actual Fire-god on the stage, so that not only there should be conviction of the world, (प्रत्यक्षार्थं हि लोकाणाम्) but also for the conviction of the audience. Can anybody doubt the testimonial

of Fire-god himself? Bhāsa knows that Indians consider Fire as one of the most sacred elements on this earth. And he has relied upon this and brought Fire-god on the stage. Moreover, Sītā is not an ordinary woman, but the goddess of wealth in the human form as a daughter of Janaka cf

इमां भगवतीं सखीं जानीहि जनकारमजाम् ।

सा भवतमनुप्राप्ता मानुषीं तनुमास्थिता ॥

Hence it is but proper that the Fire god himself should be there to vouchsafe the purity of Sītā. Secondly in 'Avimāraṇa,' he goes to the extent of calling Avimāraṇa, the hero as the son of Fire-god who does not burn him even though the hero wants to die in fire. If he were burnt by fire, people would condemn Fire for killing his own son and lose faith in him.

(b) Let us now turn to his highly-acclaimed play, 'Svapna Vāsavadattam'. Here, the Lāvāṇaka-fire is the starting point of the play. Of course, as seen above, fire-episode is bodily taken from 'Bṛhat kathā', but Bhāsa makes capital of it. Though, political motive is at the back of his mind, we notice that Fire is the major instrument in the hands of Bhāsa to succeed in his plan. We find that the Lāvāṇaka fire haunts the mind of Udayana from the beginning up to almost the end of the play. लावाणकेन हुतवहेन हृताङ्गयष्टिः । V/IC & इदं मुखमाधुर्यं कथं हृषितमग्निना । VI/13b In his lamentations, in the Acts IV & V we notice that Udayana has never forgotten that scene and though away from the scene when the actual fire broke out at Lāvāṇaka, he seems to be creating mental picture wherein his wife is supposed to be consumed by fire. Moreover, Udayana on hearing the news, wants to commit suicide by throwing his life in that very fire (तस्मिन्नेवाग्नौ प्राणान्परित्यक्तुकामः) । (I/12, 37) and not by any other means. This creates better effect on the mind of audience. Yaugandharāyaṇa takes advantage of the sudden outbreak of this fire at Lāvāṇaka in separating Udayana from Vasavadatta and facilitates his plan of uniting Udayana with Padmāvatī, which ultimately is helpful in Udayana's regaining his lost kingdom.

Thus it will be seen what important place Bhasa is giving to Fire in his present play.

(c) When we turn to 'Pāñcarātra', we find a detailed description of the sacrificial fire. Paṇḍavās performed Rājasūya sacrifice. So Duryodhana became jealous of them and so he performs another sacrifice. Now this sacrifice of Duryodhana is the major invention of Bhāsa, which is directly connected with the main purpose of the plot of the play. Now let us first look at the length to which he is

describing this sacrificial fire This is quite a lengthy description of fire ever to be found in Sanskrit plays This is an elaborate and picturesque description by three Brahmins of Duryodhan's prosperous sacrifice (अहो बुराजस्य यजनमृदि । I/2/4) There are vivid and concrete details of the atmosphere and the progress of the sacrificial fire In the end, the fire is described to be pacified This sacrifice served as the starting point of the plot and in this situation, we find the thematic origin of the play This fully suggests the future development of the theme and of the dramatic action This sacrifice removes the central cause of the family feud and thus brings mutual happiness It is not only a matter of novel interpretation but is also a case of poetic justice as probable conceived by Bhāsa From this it will be clear that sacrifice is not a matter of casual reference to Bhāsa, but he dwells upon it in detail for the development of this present play

Bhāsa is taking advantage of general esteem in which sacrifice was held by the people in his time He gives the Fire the prime importance in this play Not only he does not stop here by mentioning the actual sacrificial fire but he goes to the extent of bringing sacrificial fire or something connected with it, such as fire sticks etc in his figures of speech (c g हिडिबारणिसमूतो राक्षसाग्निः । MVI/2/2, द्रुतवहदीप्तो । MVI/0c रणसज्ज प्राणाग्निहोमत्रुमः । Uru I/4c पचाना पांडवाना मीनात्मा केने घीवृतः । DGI/6b पुत्रशोचसमुत्पितोऽग्निर्न दहत्प्राणमय हविरिति DGI/36/1)

(d) The age-old customs of chaste women burning themselves into fire after the death of their husbands is also referred to by Bhāsa in his Urubhanga There Pauravi says "I am bent on the resolve of entering (fire)" (एवद्वृतनिश्चयान रोदिमि/I52/1) Thus he does not lose sight of this aspect of Fire in the Indian society

(e) Fire has been always associated by the Indians with the institution of marriage as a witness And Bhāsa has brought the nuptial fire in three of his plays, viz Pratijñā IV/16/1 Svapna VI/II/10 and Avī VI/14/4 and 5 (अग्निसाक्षिणम्)

(f) It seems that in his plays there might be some sanctuaries of the fire god and Bhāsa does not hesitate to mention it in his Pratijñā III/2/85 (इदमग्निगृहम्)

(g) From the examples cited earlier at (3c) as to the classification under the head Fire as a standard of comparison it appears that, in Bhāsa, the metaphors, such as [तत्कुलस्यास्य वैगमिर्बलिष्वपि न शम्यति । D G I/24b are more than the similes

(h) Some of his similes or metaphor, are very aptly put in the mouth of the characters Thus अङ्गारमध्यपतितमिव । (Cha I/8d)

coming from Śakāra, रणसज्ज प्राणान्निहोमव्रतम् । (I/4c) coming from a soldier and, अभिपतति कुतो न राक्षसोऽसौ शलम इवाणु हुताशनं प्रवेष्टुम् । (Abhi IV/5c & d) coming from Sugrīva, are most appropriate

Thus references to Fire in Bhāsa are not only casual and many in number, but they indicate the importance that he wants to confer on Fire. The purpose of introducing Fire, as shown above, is also manifold. On the basis of all these the title Jvalana-mitra conferred on him appears to have more than one significance.

ABHINAVAGUPTA'S CONTRIBUTION TO RASA-THEORY*

By

V M KULKARNI

Rasa forms the most original and the greatest contribution of Sanskrit poetics to the subject of literary criticism. *Rasa* is the very 'soul', the essence of drama (and by extension of poetry). It is the aim of every dramatic performance to evoke the *rasa* in the mind of the audience. Bharata remarks that "without *rasa* nothing proceeds (from the pen of a playwright or a poet)". In other words, whatever a playwright depicts — be it an incident, event, a situation, a song, a dialogue — it is intended primarily to contribute to the development of *rasa*. From this remark it is evident that Bharata considered *rasa* to be the most important element in the drama. This remark is followed by the famous *rasa-sūtra* "*Rasa* arises from a combination or union of the *vibhāvas*, the '*anubhāvas* and the *vyabhicāribhāvas*"¹. It is the source of the latter theories of *rasa* set forth by Lollaṭa, Śaṅkuka, Bhaṭṭanāyaka and Abhinava-gupta. Unfortunately the commentaries or books in which the views of the first three commentators or thinkers appeared have been irretrievably lost and we have to depend entirely on Abhinava-gupta's presentation of their views in his *Locana* and *Abhinava-bhāratī*, the two famous commentaries on *Dhvanyāloka* and *Nāṭya-sāstra* respectively. In Lollaṭa's view, the permanent/dominant emotion itself, when intensified or developed by the *vibhāvas* etc., becomes the *rasa*. Its locus is first of all the hero of the play. The *rasa* is subsequently attributed to the actor who plays the role of the character (by imitating him in form, dress, and action). Śaṅkuka, however, refutes this view and interprets the manifestation of *rasa* as a process of inference. The permanent emotion is inferred to exist in the actor playing the role of the character, though not really present in him by means of the *anubhāvas*, skilfully exhibited in his acting. This permanent emotion thus inferred, is but a reflex (*anukara*) of the real permanent emotion of the character in the drama, and because it is a reflex, it is called by a different name, viz., *rasa*. The emotions by their very nature, are endowed with exquisite beauty and are, therefore, a source of charm

* Paper read at the Seminar on *Rasa-theory* held on 19-3-1978 at the Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan.

1 न च रसादेव इति शब्दः प्रयतेते । तत्र विभावानुभावव्यभिचारिणोपासकनिवृत्तिः ।

and pleasure when inferred Bhaṭṭanāyaka denies that *rasa* is produced or that it is perceived or that it is suggested. He ascribes to a play (or a poem) three powers or functions *abhidhā* (denotation), *bhāvanā* or *bhāvaktva* (universalization) and *bhojakatva* or *bhoga* (enjoyment). *Abhidhā* deals with what is expressed *bhāvanā* relates to the *rasa* and *bhojakatva* to the audience. It is Bhaṭṭanāyaka who for the first time compares the enjoyment of *rasa* with the enjoyment of bliss arising out of meditation on the absolute (*para-brahmāstāda*). The power of *abhidhā* is universally accepted. But the other two powers (ascribed to a play or poem) have no legitimate foundation.

After presenting these different views and refuting them Abhinavagupta sets out to enunciate his own view. At the outset, however, he frankly speaks of "the ladders of thought constructed by earlier writers" and acknowledges his indebtedness to his predecessors. Further he observes "Therefore I have not found fault with the theories of other good men. I have only refined on them."² In the course of his exposition of the nature of *rasa* he is prepared to accept the view of 'upacaya' of the permanent emotion as *rasa*, advocated by Lollaṭa, or of *anukāra* of the permanent emotion as *rasa*, adopted by Sankuka, or the view of *viśaya-sāmagrī* (having potency to create pleasure or pain) as *rasa* held by the *Sāṃkhyas* with certain qualifications.³

A careful analysis of Abhinavagupta's exposition of the *rasa* theory reveals the following aspects or characteristics

(1) An ordinary emotion is individual and immediately personal. *Rasa* is generic and depersonalised. It is shared by all *sahodayas* and it has essentially no personal significance. A permanent emotion, only when it is universalised and when it lends itself to aesthetic enjoyment (*rasana*, *carvanā*, *asvāda*), becomes *rasa*.⁴

(ii) The perception of *rasa* is in a class by itself (*sui generis*, *alaukika*), totally different from or beyond ordinary everyday experience. The experience of *rasa* is "not really of this world." It

2 तस्मात्सतामत्र न द्वयितानि मतानि तायेव तु शोधितानि । —*Nāṭyaśāstra* Vol. I p 278

It however may be pointed out that Abhinavagupta himself says elsewhere *Duṣṭascanukaranavadah* — *Abhinavabharatī* on VI 33

3 तदेव चोपचयावस्थासु देशाद्यनियन्त्रणादनुकारोऽप्यस्तु । भावानुगमितया करणात् विषयसामग्र्यपि भवतु विज्ञानवादावलम्बनात् । —*Abhinavabharatī* Vol I p 280

This text needs to be corrected in the light of Hemacandra's *Kavyanuśāsana* (p 99) एवैव चोपचयावस्थासु देशाद्यनियन्त्रणात् अनुकारोऽप्यस्तवगुणमितया [प्यस्तु भावानुगमितया] करणात् । विषयसामग्र्यपि भवतु विज्ञानवादावलम्बनात् ।

4 —अलौकिकनिर्विन्दसर्वेदनात्मकचरणागोचरो न ततो दृश्यव्यवहारो न तु सिद्धस्वभाव तात्त्वानिश्च एव न तु चरणातिरिक्तवाक्तावलम्बी स्यादित्यत्राण एव रसः । —*Ibid* p 284

experiences are *alaukika*. Abhinavagupta himself distinguishes between the transcendental joy characteristic of aesthetic relish and the bliss that comes from the contemplation of or the meditation on the Supreme Being by the yogi.⁹

(vii) The sensitive spectator (*sahṛdaya*) perceives the *vibhāvas* etc. not in an objective i.e., indifferent, uninvolved manner (*tāṭasthyena*) but by being overcome by sensitivity or sympathetic response of the heart (*sahṛdayatva* or *hṛdayasaṁvāda*). He sympathises with the original character and to a large degree he even identifies (*tanmayībhavana* or *tādātmya*) with the character and the situations depicted etc. He however does not identify himself with the original character completely. He no doubt undergoes the emotions — “He is pleased when the character is pleased, he is in sorrow when the character is in sorrow, he is angry when anger (*krodha*) is being presented and afraid when *bhaya* is presented” — but he maintains certain distance. But before the identification of the spectator with the original character, and the events and things portrayed in the drama, takes place they all are generalised or contemplated universally i.e. they become independent of any relation with particular individual time and place. In the theatre, we live neither in the time or space of the original characters nor of the actors. We are outside both time and space which characterise the world we know; it is a different order of reality.¹⁰

9 Read the following passage from the *Abhinavabhāratī* (p. 285)

किं त्वलौकिकविभावादित्येवयोगबलोपनतैवेव चर्वणा। सा च प्रत्यक्षानुमानागमोपमानादिलौकिकप्रमाणजनितरत्या
सबोधनं तथा योगिप्रत्यक्षजनिततदस्यपरसवित्तिज्ञानात् सखलवैयर्थिकोपमानसूत्रशुद्धपरयोगित्तत्वात्मानदेव-
यनानुभवमच्च निमित्त्यते। एतेषां यथायोगमर्जनादिबिभ्रान्तरौदयात् तादस्यैवस्फुटत्वविषयावेवावैयर्थ्यकृतसौंदर्य-
विरहात्। अत्र तु—न विभ्रान्तरादीनां सभन इत्यवबोधनं बहुल। and, from the *Locana* (p. 160)
इह तु विभावादिवर्णा—अन्य एवाय रसास्वाद।

It is, however, interesting that Abhinavagupta condemns this *rasāsvāda* as very inferior to the bliss that comes from finding repose in God
मकनप्रमाणपरिनिश्चिनइष्टादुष्टविषयविशेषज यत्सुख यदपि वा लोकोत्तर रसचर्वणात्मकं तत् उभयतोऽपि
परमेश्वरविभ्रान्त्यानन्दं प्रकुण्वते तदतन्वद्विप्रुमानावभासो हि रसास्वाद। —*Locana*, p. 508
(BP ed., Banaras, 1940)

10 लौकिकेनानुमानेन मस्त्वत प्रमदादिर्न तादस्येन प्रतिपद्यते। अपि तु हृदयसवादात्मकसहृदयास्ववलात् पूर्णमविष्य-
द्रपात्वादाहृदुयोमावेनानुमानस्मृत्यादिसोपापनमाहृद्वेव (?) सोपापनममाहृद्वेव तन्मयोमावोचितवर्णनाप्राप्तया।

—*Ibid*, p. 284

And, सत एव ‘भीतोऽहं शत्रुवैयर्थ्यो मध्यस्थो वा’ इत्यादिप्रत्ययेभ्यो दुःखमुखादिकलहनादिबुद्धयतरोदयनियम-
कृतया विघ्नबहुलेभ्यो विवर्णन निर्विघ्नप्रतीतिप्राप्त साक्षादिव हृदये निविजमानं अमुषोरिव विपरिवर्तमान-
मवापको रसः। तयाविधे हि श्रवे नात्माऽयन्ततिरस्त्वो न विशेषत उल्लिखितः। —*Ibid*, p. 279
तत्र एव न परिमितमेव साधारणम्। अपि तु विततम्—तदत्र साक्षात्कार्यमाणत्वे परिसोपिका मदादिसाग्री।
मह्यो वस्तुमया काव्यापि नावा च देशकालप्रमाणादीनां नियमहेतूनामन्योन्यप्रतिब-प्रबलादत्यन्तमपसारणे स एव
साधारणीभाव मुतरा पुष्पति। —*Ibid*, p. 279.

And, अत एवोभयदेशकालत्यागः।—तेन साधारणीभूता सन्तानवृत्तेरेवस्या एव वा सविदो गोचरभूता
रतिः शुद्धापर। साधारणी (भावना) च विभावादिविरिति —*Ibid*, pp. 285-286

Abhinavagupta is indebted to various predecessors for the different aspects of his concept of *rasa*: he is indebted to Anandavardhana as regards the idea that *rasa* is always and ever suggested and never expressed (described in words); to Śaṅkuka as regards the idea that the perception of *rasa* does not fall within the recognised categories of knowledge (and is thus *alaukika*, in a class by itself) and that the reality of *rasa* is not unprovable because it is actually felt. (*sva-samvedanasiddha*); to Bhaṭṭa Nāyaka as regards the idea of *sādhāraṇya* or *sādhāraṇībhāva* or *sādhāraṇīkaraṇa*, and the comparison of *rasāsuvāda* with *parabrahmāsvāda*, and the concept that *rasa* is by its very nature pleasurable.¹¹ Abhinavagupta's contribution to the *rasa* theory lies mainly in his great emphasis on the transcendental or unique nature (*alaukikatva*) of *rasa*, and the pleasurable nature of all *rasas* and the generalisation of the sensitive reader's own emotion. He will also be remembered for having coined new critical terms like *sahyadaya*, *hṛdayasaṁvāda*, *srātmānupraveśa*, *tanmanyībhāva* or *tanmayībhavana* or *tādātmya*, *carvaṇā*, *camatkāra*, *alaukika*, and so forth. These terms are frequently used in books on literary criticism after the twelfth century.

Many post-Abhinavagupta writers including Mammaṭa, Hema-candra, Viśvanātha and Paṇḍitarāja Jagannātha accept Abhinavagupta's view without any hesitation. It may, however, be stated, in passing, that the authors of *Nāṭyadarpaṇa* and of *Kāvyaaprakāśa-khaṇḍana* severely criticise Abhinavagupta for his view that all *rasas* are pleasurable

11 रसोऽनन्यत्वं यादिविज्ञानशब्देन रजस्तमोऽनुवेष्टव्यं विश्वव्याप्त्वं दृष्टिविस्तार विज्ञान-तत्त्वज्ञेन सत्त्वोद्वेकप्रशान्तद-
मोनिजनविद्विषयान्तिनसंज्ञेन परब्रह्मास्वादसंविधेन मोयेन पर मृज्यते । —Ibid, p 277

From the following passage it would appear that Śaṅkuka too held the view that all the *rasas* are pleasurable. Abhinavagupta, however, points out the difference between the two positions:

ये तु रसाद्यनुकरणरूप रसमाह्वयं बोधयन्ति शास्त्रं त्वं मुखहनुति । परिहरन्ति च अस्ति कोऽपि नाट्यगतानां
विशेष इति । तत्र बोध सावदमत् । शोको हि प्रतीमया किं स्वात्मनि प्रत्येतुं च विनोतीति नियमः । शत्रु-
दुष्टे प्रहृषति । मर्त्यत्र च मर्त्यस्पर्शकत् । उत्तर तु साधना वस्तुस्वभावमविशेषेति न किञ्चिदत्र तत्त्वम् । अरम्यमत्र
कथेदनेवान् दधनमात्माद्यते - तत्र वा दुःखाश्रयः । केवल तत्त्वं चित्रताकरणे रतिशोकादिव्यामनाव्यापारः ।
तदुद्भाषणे चाग्निन्यादिव्यापारः । —Ibid, pp 291-292

THE PROCESS OF 'रसनिष्पत्ति'

By

G V DAVANE

The वेदसाहित्यिन्स maintain that the world was never created and जगदुत्पत्ति cannot be discussed from a metaphysical point of view. Similarly the exponents of रस maintain that रस is not created and really speaking रसनिष्पत्ति does not take place. What springs up in good literature is not रस but its relish, चर्वणा. Hence we are analysing the process of रसवचनानिष्पत्ति.

The word रस in the sense of the highest bliss was known to the उपनिषद्स also, but it is भरत, the author of the नाट्यशास्त्र who for the first time, has used it in the context of the literary compositions.

Since no dramatic device can be effective without रस (न रसा दूत इति च दर्शयं प्रवर्तते ।) भरत had to discuss it in the context of drama. He gives his oft quoted, much-discussed रससूत्र -

विभावानुभावव्यभिचारिरसयोगाद्वसनिष्पत्ति ।

He accepts रसनिष्पत्ति as an established fact and does not bother to analyse the process. भरत must not have dreamt that this short aphorism was going to inspire many a Sanskrit commentator and was going to bring to light numerous expositions on the topic. After भरत many ancient commentators must have tried to throw light on this सूत्र. Unfortunately their dissertations have been irrevocably lost to us. Thanks to the intellectual giant अभिनवगुप्त that the views of some of them are at least partially preserved for us. The earliest available commentary on the नाट्यशास्त्र is अभिनवभारती of अभिनवगुप्त. He has referred to रस in a number of places in the अभिनवभारती and the ध्वन्यालोकसूचन. In his commentary on the N S Chapter VI he has discussed the problem of रसनिष्पत्ति in details. This scholarly exposition had such a strong impact upon the literary critics like मम्मट, हेमचन्द्र and विश्वनाथ that all of them have simply reproduced his views. माणिक्यचन्द्र the author of सङ्केत pays him a compliment in this regard — सर्वस्व रसम्यास्य मट्टपादा हि जानते ।

Before giving his own theory अभिनव mentions and refutes the views of his three predecessors as follows —

* Paper read at the Seminar on Rasa-theory held on 19.3.1978 at the Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan.

(A) सौन्दर्य - स्वादिन् are the permanent emotions inherent in every human being in a subtle undeveloped form. When a स्वादिन् comes in contact with the respective विभाव, अनुभाव and व्यभिचारिभाव it becomes fully developed (उपचित) and the resultant is रस, the aesthetic delight (स्वाम्येव विभावादिभिरुपचितो रसः ।) During this process the स्वादिन् develops different relations with the different constituents of रस as follows — स्वादिन्-विभाव उत्पाद्य उत्पादकभाव, because विभावानि produce उपचित - स्वादिन्, १ स्वादिन् - अनुभाव गम्यगमकभाव since the उपचय is inferred through the 'अनुभाव' स्वादिन्—२ भिचारिभाव पोष्यपोषकभाव because व्यभिचारिन् develop and expediate रस. This रस the उपचिनस्वादिन् really belongs to the character of the original story like राम दुष्यन्त or भीम yet the actor presents everything with full concentration and hence a peculiar charm (वस्तुसौन्दर्य) is developed. Hence now the spectators superimpose the रस on the actor. It is this superimposition that leads to their delight.

This theory of सौन्दर्य is known as उत्पत्तिवाद because according to him उपचय of स्वादिन् is produced by विभावादिसौन्दर्य is called a मीमांसक. Modern scholars explain this saying that he is उत्तरमीमांसक i.e. a वेदान्तिन्. For he speaks of the superimposition of पात्र-स्वादिभाव on the नट just as a वेदान्तिन् speaks of the अध्यस्त of जगत् on ब्रह्मन्. To my mind he can be called a मीमांसक because in his spirit to deny व्यञ्जना he includes it under अभिधा accompanied by अर्थापत्ति which he describes as farflung process of अभिधा.

सौन्दर्य's explanation of रसनिरूपित did not appeal to other critics like शङ्कुक, who pointed out numerous flaws in it. The most noteworthy defect is as follows —

How does this रस come to be relished by the spectators, when it is in no way connected with them?

(B) शङ्कुक explains the सूत्र as follows —

The स्वादिभाव really belongs to the character in the original story. The actor imitates the अनुभाव of this स्वादिन् very skillfully, by dint of his training and practice. On the basis of their own experience the spectators in the play house have already established a हेतु-साध्य भाव between the अनुभाव and the स्वादिन् that the particular अनुभाव reveal a particular स्वादिन्. Now when they witness the paraphernalia of रस i.e. विभाव अनुभाव and व्यभिचारिभाव on the stage they know that all this is artificial. Yet the efficient acting of the actors creates such a verisimilitude that the spectators get lost into the performance and accept the विभावानि as

genuine Now they infer the स्थायिभाव in the नट They feel that this स्थायिभाव is similar to that of the पात्र In order to distinguish it from the original स्थायिभाव they call it रस (रतिरनुव्रियमाणा शृङ्गारः) This inference of the spectators is different from ordinary inferences (यस्तुमोदयंबलात्) It is as good as perception, due to its peculiar charm It is something like visualising a horse on seeing the picture of a horse, in which the horse is not real, illusory, similar or doubtful (चित्रतुरगयाय)

अनुमान is the very pivot of शङ्कु's theory Hence it is called अनुमितिवाद and he is designated as a नैयायिक

This explanation of the रससूत्र also was subjected to acid test by later critics Following are the most noteworthy defects in it —

(1) Imitation implies that the imitator has thorough knowledge of the original matter to be imitated How can an actor imitate a character like राम and दुष्यन्त?

(2) रस is a matter of direct experience How can it be relished through an अनुमान?

(3) An inference wrongly formed on the basis of something similar to the middle term leads to a fallacy and not to the conclusion of a similar साध्य If one sees fog similar to smoke and infers the existence of fire it will only lead to a fallacy and not to the conclusion of something similar to fire How can the spectators infer similar स्थायिभाव in the actor?

After शङ्कु's भट्टनायक came forward to explain the process of रसनिष्पत्ति Till now the स्थायिन् was located in the पात्र or the नट while the relish is enjoyed by the spectators It is भट्टनायक who for the first time treats रस as an experience belonging to the spectators He started analysing how a dramatic performance appeals to the spectators He could observe two stages —

(1) The spectators happen to disconnect the entire performance from the aspects of particular space time and substratum

(2) Then it enters the innermost recesses of their hearts He called the first phenomenon as साधारणीकरण, generalisation or universalisation The second is what अभिनव calls as तन्मयीभवन He could realise that this साधारणीकरण cannot be effected by अभिघात At the same time he did not want to accept व्यञ्जना Therefore he called this process of imaginative absorption as भाववत्त्वव्यापार (A process which brings into existence (casual of भू to be) the generalisation This process detaches the whole dramatic scene from all particulars of time space and person Now if it remains an abstract

generalised concept the spectators cannot enjoy it. Hence चट्टनायक has to bring in another process that would enable the spectators to enjoy it. He calls it मोक्षरसमयार (A process of introspective taste which makes (casual of $\sqrt{\text{मू}$ to enjoy) the spectators enjoy the performance). The नायारणीक elements on the stage incite a state of mind, predominated by रस in the case of the spectators. Their minds pass through दृष्टि and विचार when मरम mingles with रस and तमन् respectively. The स्वादिन् of a spectator now rests in its own lustrous blissful consciousness and the spectator enjoys the highest aesthetic experience. Enjoyment of रस by the spectators is the main foundation of नायक's theory, which is therefore known as मुक्तिवाद. He is called as a नायकवादिन् probably because like the पुरुष of the सांख्य the actor remains aloof from this enjoyment.

It can be easily observed that this theory of चट्टनायक has really paved the way for अभिनव's अभिव्यक्तिवाद. Most of the conclusions of नायक are acceptable to अभिनव. The only criticism that he offers is on नायक's statement 'भावनामात्र एव मुक्तायतिगमः ।' and about मोक्षरसमयार he inquires— 'प्रतीत्यादिव्यतिरिक्त. मगरे को भोगः ?'

Thus चट्टनायक had almost touched upon the crux of the problem. An explanation for the नायारणीकरण and रसानुभव was to be offered and the theory was going to be an established fact. With his matchless genius अभिनवबालुङ्ग came forward to do it and did it very effectively and efficiently indeed. This great critic modestly says that he is not saying anything new; but is just expounding what his great predecessors have already said. According to अभिनवबालुङ्ग the power of व्यञ्जना could offer a convincing explanation for both the processes of भावरस and मोक्षरस. It is व्यञ्जना that divests the paraphernalia of रस displayed on the stage of its particular space, time and individuality. It is an extra-ordinary process that leads the aesthete through the gateway of suggested sense to the aesthetic summum bonum of चमत्कार or रसपर्वणा. When the whole network is thus साधारणीकृत it at once appeals to the appreciative spectators by a special type of intuitive cognition. This is रस, the aesthetic experience.

अभिनव's theory is rightly known as अभिव्यक्तिवाद. According to him रस was already present in the minds of the spectators in an अव्यक्त form or latent impressions. With the proper stimulant (आलम्बनविभाव) excitants (उद्दीपनविभाव) and insuants (अनुभाव) it blends into the manifest form, enjoyable by all सहृदयः

Let us illustrate this with the first Act of the अभिज्ञानशाकुन्तल. दुष्यन्त is the आलम्बनविभाव, शकुन्तला is the आलम्बनविभाव. The hermitage in the

solitude, the trees, the creepers, the remarks of प्रियवदा and अन्तर्मुखा all these act as उद्दीपकभावः रसि of दुष्यन्त gets the stimulus at the very first sight of मनुमता when he remarks, 'अहो मधुरमासी दशनम् ।'. Further he admires her charms again and again and goes on thinking of her only. He fears that perhaps she may be वसव's real daughter and then he cannot marry her. Thus the different व्यभिचारिभावः like अभिपत्त्या, चिन्ता, मद्धा develops, in his mind. दुष्यन्त's reactions to all these feelings are seen in his facial expressions, knitting of the eye brows, horripation, tremour, etc. With a harmonious blending of the विभावः अनुमाः and व्यभिचारिभावः and with a similar response from मनुमता दुष्यन्त's रसि develops into गुह्यारसः.

Now let us review this in the light of the stage-performance. There is an actor playing the role of दुष्यन्त and three actresses playing the roles of मनुमता, प्रियवदा and अन्तर्मुखा. The spectators come to the play-house. The music, setting, surroundings, etc. gradually make them forget their practical experience. Slowly and gradually their hearts get predominated by रसः and become clean like a mirror, ready to catch any reflection. Now the skilled acting of the actors, the proper setting on the stage, the suitable make-up, the efficient direction of the director, the necessary atmosphere created by the music all these create verisimilitude of the actual happenings, on the stage. The suggestive power used by the play-wright in the recitative element and the gestures and histrionics on the part of the actors now remove all bonds of space, time and substratum. Now the spectator does not experience दुष्यन्तः, नटः or even his own प्रेक्षकत्वम्. It is fully a साधारणीकृत phenomenon. Now the all-powerful suggestive power operates further on and the generalised experience automatically becomes the private experience of each one of the spectators. Each one is immersed into it. विश्वनाथ has described this in his साहित्यदर्पण as follows —

परस्य न परस्येति ममेति न ममेति च ।

तदास्वादे विभावादे परिच्छेदो न विद्यते ॥

The experience of one spectator meets with हृदयसेवाद of other spectators. There results एक्यता, uniformity of the sympathetic imaginative experience of all spectators. This happens because latent impressions in the minds of all spectators belong to the same category. The spectators are now forgetful of everything else excepting this wondrous bliss. This is विगलितवेद्यान्तर आनन्द, 'वेद्यान्तरस-शङ्कन्य आनन्द'. This can be compared to आत्मानन्द of the वेदान्त :-

स यदा प्रियया मित्रया सपरिपक्वतो न बाह्य चिञ्चन वेद नान्तरम्, एष धारेष्यमात्मा प्राप्तेनात्मना सपरिपक्वतो न बाह्य चिञ्चन वेद नान्तरम् । (बृहदारण्यकोपनिषद्)

Thus the minds of the spectators are unified with their own blissful, shining consciousness. This intuitive experience is next to ब्रह्मानन्द only, differing from it in this much only that while ब्रह्मान् is निष्कल, निःस्पृह their minds are tinged with a variety of latent impressions विरचनाय has described this रसास्वाद as follows —

सत्त्वोद्वेगादलण्डस्वप्रकाशानन्दचिन्मय ।

वेद्यान्तरस्यशून्यो ब्रह्मास्वादसहोदर ॥

लोकान्तरवमत्कारप्राण वैरिचत् प्रमातुमि ।

स्वाकारवदभिप्लव्तेनायमास्वाद्यते रस ॥

मृदुवान् goes to the extent of saying that this रसास्वाद is even superior to the experience of a perfect योगिन्; because the योगिन् has to achieve the state with great hardships while here the bliss flows spontaneously

The essence of this aesthetic state is wondrous joy रस सारवचमत्कार. In this engrossed state the spectators feel as if this wondrous joy is just throbbing in front of them, penetrating their hearts through and through and is nailed up within the innermost recesses of their heart अभिनव has compared this with the blooming of a miraculous flower (अद्भुतपुष्प), whose petals bloom within the wink of an eye, never to fade away. This experience is simply indescribable. It is not the sumtotal of the विभावः अनुभावः and व्यभिचारिभावः, but something extra-ordinary over and above all of them. It is compared to पादव-रम, पानकरस or प्रपाणकरसन्त्याय

What is the proof of its existence? The theorists clearly say that the experience of the connoisseurs is the only proof for it. It is स्वसवेद्य, known through सचेतसामनुभव only. It is not a कार्य resulting from विभावादिस because unlike other effects it cannot exist without its निमित्तकारण. It is not a ज्ञाप्य which is ज्ञापित by विभावादिस since only an already existing entity can be ज्ञापित. It is not like सविकल्पप्रत्यक्ष because in this आस्वाद, all distinction have evaporated. Nor again is this like निविकल्पप्रत्यक्ष, since this रसास्वाद is स्वयन्विकल्पसवेदन

That is exactly the reason why अभिनव and others take pride in describing it as अलौकिक. This experience of aesthetic delight is not an objective phenomenon, but purely a subjective experience, and yet there is हृदयसवाद of all spectators about this personal experience.

However, it is worthnoting that the spectator identifies himself with the various dramatic situations presented on the stage and yet

always maintains an aesthetic distance. No appreciative spectator rushes to the stage to drive away the bee that is hovering around शकुन्तला's face or to give a good beating to the wicked शकार. There is a transparent and yet adamant partition that separates the spectator from the dramatic character. He does not experience feelings of the characters but rather feels about the feelings. Modern scholars describe this as 'meta feeling'. That is why Worsfold says in his 'Principles of Criticism'—"Actuality, not reality, i.e. reality heightened by concentration is the essence of drama"

Now भरत had brought in the concept of रस for नाट्य only. Later critics like अभिनव extended the theory so as to make it applicable to literature as a whole. Hence अभिनव remarks 'काव्येऽपि नाट्यायमान एव रसः ।

The abstract images of thoughts and ideas represented by a poet's words play the roles of actors on the stage of a reader's mind. That is why भरतनाट्यशास्त्रे warns the poets प्रयोगत्वमनापने काव्ये नास्वादसम्भवः ।

He glorifies the descriptive art of great poets as follows —

वर्णनोत्कलिता भोगप्रौढोक्त्या सम्यगपिता ।

उद्यानकान्ताचन्द्राद्या भावा प्रत्यक्षवत् स्फुटा ॥

We are reminded of many pen pictures of the master poet कालिदास, e.g. त वीक्ष्य शेषयुमती सरसाङ्गयष्टि-

निक्षेपणाय पदमुद्धतमुद्धहन्ती ।

मार्गाचलव्यतिकराकुलितेव सिन्धु

शंखाधिराजतनया न ययौ न तस्थौ ॥ (कुमारसम्भव सग ५)

धेन्वा सदध्यासितकातराक्ष्या

निरोक्ष्यमाण सुतरां दधालु ॥ (रघुवश सग २)

Thus the subtle process of रसनिष्पत्ति is based upon the beautiful art of suggestion, which is found in drama poem all good literary pieces and in fact in all works of art

THE THEORIES OF RASA AND DHVANI*

By

Y S WALIMBE

Both Rasa and Dhvani have been regarded as extremely valuable concepts in the field of Sanskrit poetics to the extent, that they have been considered to be the very soul of poetry, and a very voluminous literature has come into existence defining their respective connotations, and their bearings on each other. It has also been suggested that both these concepts, in some form or other, were known to practising poets in very ancient times, for example, even to the Rgvedic poets, though a theoretical discussion of these concepts has not come down to us from olden times. In his recent book, 'The Rgvedic Foundations of Classical Poetics', Dr T G Mainkar has tried to establish that the Rgvedic poets were not only familiar with the concepts of Rasa and poetic suggestion, including terms like Adbhuta, Vira Karuna, Bhaya, Hāsa, Raudra, Vātsalya, Bhakti and their connotations, but also with much more. They knew that expressions employed in poetry always point to something else that is sought to be suggested, and these poets had actually employed these Rasas in their compositions, and the varieties of Dhvani known as 'Samlakṣyakrama' and 'Asamlakṣyakrama' and 'Guṇabhūtavyangya' and 'Vyangya' are actually present in the Rgvedic verses ('Rgvedic Foundations', pp 59-66). However, it is evident that the Rasa theory or school (sampradāya) as such, enjoys a longer tradition in the history of Sanskrit poetics, from the times of Bharata's Nāṭyaśāstra, viz. of at least more than sixteen to seventeen centuries, while the Dhvani school is comparatively younger and has lived a little over a thousand years since the time of Anandavardhana's Dhvanīlōka.

In order to have a clear perception of the Rasa and Dhvani theories, it is essential to study the genesis of each theory separately, since the genesis itself will help us to understand the exact scope of these concepts, and the exact points of contact between them. It is quite obvious that the Rasa theory was first promulgated by Bharata in the 6th Adhyāya of the Nāṭyaśāstra in connection with the science of dramaturgy and the actual performance of a play on the stage. While discussing the origin of the Nāṭyaveda, Bharata informs us that Lord Brahman (Dṛghina) fashioned four constituents

* Paper read at the Seminar on Rasa theory held on 19.3.1978 at the Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan.

of the drama from the four Vedas, He picked up the dramatic text from the Rgveda, the songs or verse portion from the Sāmaveda, the details of gesticulation from the Yajurveda, and the Rasas or sentiments, emotions, etc from the Atharvaveda (जग्राह पाठ्यमृगवेदास्तामभ्यो गीतमेव च । यजुर्वेदादभिनयान् रसानायर्वणादपि ॥ —Nāṭyaśāstra I 17) Thus the treatment of Rasas by Bharata owes its existence to the exigencies of the dramatic performance and its actual appreciation by the spectators, the Sāmājikas, in the theatre, It was only later that the theory was extended to the field of poetics or literature in general, and accepted as the underlying philosophy of aesthetics or art—experience, as Dr Coomaraswamy, Dr Hiriyanna and other scholars have tried to interpret it In fact, while explaining the implications of the Rasasutra, viz 'तत्र विभावानुभावव्यभिचारिसंयोगाद्रसनिष्पत्तिः' (—N § Adhyāya VI), Bharata resorts to the analogy of contented people relishing the various flavours of well — prepared food and obtaining pleasure etc, corresponding to receptive spectators relishing the various emotions replenished by charming forms of gesticulation and obtaining pleasure etc Hence it is that they have been explained as dramatic emotions or sentiments (रस इति क पदार्थः । उच्यते-आस्वाद्यत्वात् । कथमास्वाद्यते रसः । यथा हि नानाव्यञ्जनसंस्कृतमन्नं भुञ्जाना रसानास्वादयति सुमनसं पुरुषा हर्षदीर्घाधिगच्छन्ति तथा नानाभावाभि नयव्यञ्जितान् वागङ्गसत्त्वोपेतान् स्थायिभावानास्वादयति सुमनसं प्रेक्षका हर्षदीर्घाधि गच्छन्ति । तस्माद्भाटचरसा इत्यभिधायक्याता । N § VI)

However, it was clear that the analogy of relishing the flavour of food was not to be understood literally, and what Bharata meant to analyse was the psychological experience of the spectators witnessing a play on the stage He explains a Bhāva as that which reveals the inner idea or intent of the poet through the medium of words, physical gestures, emotional expression of the face and concentrated acting (वागङ्गमुखरागेण सत्त्वेनाभिनयेन च । ध्वरेत्तर्गतं भाव भावदन्भाव उच्यते । —N § VII 2) The poet's intent appeals to the aesthetic susceptibility of the spectator, and then only the spectator undergoes the aesthetic experience Even the definitions of Vibhāva and Anubhāva that Bharata gives refer to this idea of the poet's intent being presented to the spectator's consciousness (बह्वोऽर्थं विभाव्यन्ते वागङ्गाभिनयाधया । अनेन यस्मात्तेनाय विभाव इति सञ्ज्ञितः ॥ and वागङ्गाभिनयेनेह यतस्त्वर्थोऽनुभाव्यते ॥ शास्त्राङ्गोपाङ्गसमुपसत्त्वनुभावस्तत स्मृतः ॥ NS VII 4, 5) Particularly Abhinavagupta's exposition of the Rasa experience leaves no doubt in our minds that the whole experience occurred on a psychological and not on a physical level, though the medium of that experience was necessarily physical or sensuous

Thus Rasa occupied the central position in Bharata's analysis of dramatic experience in the theatre. However, in course of time the theory rather lost its prominence in the field of poetics, and other constituents of poetic beauty mentioned by Bharata in the Nāṭya-śāstra, such as Alamkāras or figures of words and speech (N ९ XVI) and Kāvya-guṇas, assumed more importance in the eyes of later poetics. In fact, a very long period in the history of Sanskrit poetics from the sixth to the end of the ninth century A D, starting from Bhaṭṭi may be clearly described as the period of the Alamkāra school of poetics, and having its most powerful champions in Daṇḍin, Bhāmaha, Udbhaṭa, Vāmana (to some extent), and Rudraṭa. These Alamkārikas, properly so called, raised the poetic figures to the most exalted status in the entire scheme of poetic thought, and believed that the main reason of the appeal of poetry to the reader is the skilful use of charming figures (वाक्य ग्राह्यमलङ्कारात्) and मोदयमलङ्कारः । — Vāmana's Kāvyaalamkārasūtravṛtti, I 1, 2) In other words, poetic beauty, in their opinion, was mainly constituted by the Alamkāras, and hence the poet must concentrate his attention on poetic figures and conceits to make his composition presentable and relishable. Thus for the first time, considerable emphasis was laid upon the presentational or expressive aspect of poetry than the reflective or emotional aspect, that is, form became more important than content. Though poetry was recognised as the association or companionship of word and sense (शब्दाद्यौ वृत्तिर्वाक्यम् । — Bhāmaha, I 16, शब्दाद्यौ वाक्यम् — Rudraṭa, II 1, वाक्यशब्दोऽयं गुणानङ्कारसंस्कृतयोः शब्दाद्ययोरवर्तते । — Vāmana, I 11 वृत्तिः), the embodiment of poetry was mainly regarded as brought about by a certain set of words or expressions having appropriate meaning or ideas, as Daṇḍin clearly observes (शरीर तावदिष्टार्यव्यवच्छिन्ना पदावली । — Kavyādarsa I 10). The Alamkārikas revealed a typically grammarian — fashioned preference for word as opposed to idea or meaning that it embodied, and then ways and means were suggested as to how this word or expression can be rendered more charming. Consequently, we find a number of authors assiduously engaged in finding out and prescribing the numerous devices and decorations to beautify the 'word'. The figurative images, which really constitute imaginative elements of poetic genius, became more and more conventionalized and stereotyped. There was a certain stylization and every charming face came to be compared to the moon or to the lotus. The poets also concentrated more on the skill in expression than on novelty of ideas, and poetic composition was reduced to a more or less mechanical process, or a jargon. The poetics exhausted all their wits in describing what is the body of poetry or Kāvyaśarīra, and how

it is to be adorned or decorated, totally forgetting that the body is meant to house the spirit or the soul (Ātman), and that this spirit also deserves some consideration Vāmana no doubt declared Riti to be the soul of poetry (रीतिरात्मा काव्यस्य । —Vāmana I 2 6), but even his concept of Riti was only explained as a peculiar arrangement of words (विशिष्टा पदरचना रीति । —Vāmana I 2 7), and the Gunas were described by him as the constituents elements of poetic beauty (काव्यशोभाया वर्तरी धर्मा गुणा । —Vāmana III 1 1), while the Alamkāras were described as the causes of additional or higher poetic beauty (तदतिशयहेतवस्त्वनकारा । —Vāmana III 1 2) Thus once again the Alamkāras were given the palm of superiority Though they were defined as the wider principles of poetic beauty viz सौन्दर्यमलङ्कार, in practice the concept was much narrowed down Hence there is no surprise if we find these early poets exhausting all their intellectual resources in multiplying the number of Alamkāras or rhetorical categories, distinguishing them very minutely from one another, and indulging in their divisions and subdivisions There was practically no awareness of any poetic principle higher or more vital than the figures, and hence even the poetry of this period tended to become more and more artificial and conventional

It was only with the advent of Ānandavardhana and his Dhvanyaloka that poetics was freed from this overburdening of figures or decorative categories It was only Rudrata, the author of the Kāvyaalamkāra who has spoken of Vyangya being the most important element in a poem in connection with his discussion of the figure Bhava The other poets were aware of Rasas or Bhāvas, but always assigned them a position subordinate to that of the Alamkāras in fact, they included these concepts in the Alamkāras only, designating them as Rasavat Preyas Ūjasvin Samāhita etc Even from Ānandavardhana's suggestive statement in the beginning of the Dhvanyaloka (काव्यस्यात्मा ध्वनिरिति बुद्ध्यै समाम्नातपूर्व । —Dhvanyā I 1) it appears that there were scholars willing to accord to Dhvani the highest status of the soul of poetry, but by and large, both the concepts of Rasa and Dhvani were treated rather casually, and were not given their due weightage In fact, as Ānandavardhana states many scholars affirmed that there was no such principle as Dhvani at all (तस्याभाव जगदुत्पत्ते) and still others who held that it could well be subsumed under Lakṣaṇā or Bhakti (भाक्तमाहुस्तथाज्यै)

Some others were prepared to recognise the validity of Dhvani in poetry, but believed that it could only be perceived but not defined in words (निश्चिदावा स्थितमविषये तत्त्वमूखस्तदीयम्) Hence to end this state of confusion and uncertainty Ānandavardhana took

it upon himself to expound the essential nature of the principle of Dhvani (नेन ब्रूम सहृदयमन-प्रीतये तत्स्वरूपम् ॥ —Dhvanyāloka I 1) While establishing Dhvani on a very substantial logical foundation, Anandavardhana also accorded to the concept of Rasa the enviable position that it had enjoyed in the times of Bharata, and that was denied to it in the subsequent Alamkāra period, as explained above

While Bharata conceived Rasa as the emotional content of drama made relishable to the spectators through the presentation of this content on the stage, rendered spectacular by music, dance and gesture, Anandavardhana regarded Dhvani as the principle constituting the highest beauty in all literature. He emphasized that this principle constituted the essential secret of all great compositions such as the Rāmāyana and the Mahābhārata, but even the greatest thinkers of the past had been unable to bring out its essential nature, and hence his attempt to expound it (तस्य हि ध्वने स्वरूपं सकलसत्त्विकाव्योपनिषद्भूतमतिरमणीयमणीयसीमिदं चिरन्तनवाच्यलक्षणविधायिना बुद्धिभि-रनुमीक्षितपूर्वम्, अथ च रामायणमहाभारतप्रभृतिभिः सद्ये सर्वत्र प्रसिद्धव्यवहारं लभ्यते। —Dhvanyāloka I) He was only removing the dust gathered on the surface, so that the principle of Dhvani could shine once again in its pristine glory. Thus Anandavardhana was able to correlate the concept of Dhvani not only with contemporary poetry, but also with masterpieces of the past like the two epics, and bring the weight of authority to bear on his side. In his wider concept of poetry he included not only earlier elements of poetic beauty such as the Gunas and the Alamkāras, but he also included Rasa along with them (वाच्यस्य हि कलितोचित-सन्निवेशवाहणः । —Dhvanyāloka I, Vṛtti) According to Abhinava-gupta, the word 'lalita' here refers to Gunas and Alamkāras (कलितशब्देन गुणालङ्कारानुग्रहमाह। —Locana), and the word 'ucita' refers to propriety arising out of the proper delineation of Rasa (उचितशब्देन रसविषयमेवोचितं भवतीति दर्शयन् रसध्वनेर्जीवित-त्वं सूचयति । —Locana) This body of poetry (kāvyasarīra) necessarily demanded a soul to illumine and inhabit it and this soul was the poetic content (योज्यं सहृदयश्चाद्य वाच्यत्वेति व्यवस्थितः । —Dhvanyāloka I 2) Thus, at the very outset of his exposition of Dhvani, Anandavardhana accorded to poetic content the exalted status of the soul of poetry, and by a logical implication, reduced the Gunas, Alamkāras and even Rasa to the subordinate position of the body of poetry. Thus his preference was unmistakable: poetic content was more important and Rasa was less important, as being one of the provinces of the empire of poetry.

This poetic content or *kāvyaārtha*, the soul of poetry, was declared by Ānandavardhana to be of two varieties, *vācya* or expressed, and *pratiyamāna* or suggested (वाच्यप्रतीयमानाभ्यां तस्य भेदादुभौ स्मृतौ।

—Dhvanyāloka I 2) Thus *pratiyamāna* sense, found in the masterpieces of all great poets, was something unique in nature, and could not be identified with any of the usual features of poetry like the *Alamkāras*. It was a cumulative effect of all these and yet over and above all these, just as the charm of beautiful ladies is over and above their physical features 'प्रतीयमानं पूनरन्यदेव वस्तुस्ति वाणीषु महाकवीनां लावण्यमिवाङ्गनाम् ॥ —Dhvanyāloka I 4) The

pratiyamāna artha, again, admits of numerous varieties, as arising from only *vastu* or an idea, *alamkāra* or a figure, *Rasa* or an emotion and so on. Though all these varieties are implied by the power of *vācyaārtha* only, they are entirely different from *vācya* (स ह्यर्थो वाच्य सामर्थ्याक्षिप्तं वस्तुमात्रमलवाररसादयश्चेत्यनेन प्रभेदप्रभिन्नो दर्शयिष्यते। वाच्यादयत्नम्। —Dhvanyāloka, *ṛtti* on I 4). Accordingly, it may be styled as *vastudhvani*, *alamkāradhvani* and *rasadhvani* etc. It is here that

Abhinavagupta declares in the *Locana* that *Rasadhvani* is nothing but *Dhvani* only, and it is mainly regarded as the soul of poetry (यस्तु स्वप्नेऽपि न स्वशब्दवाच्यो न लौकिकव्यवहारपतितः किं तु शब्दसमर्थ्यमाणहृदयसत्त्वादमुन्दरविभावानुभावसमुचितप्राग्विनिविष्टरत्यादिवासनानुरागमुकुमारस्वसंविदानन्दचर्वणाव्यापाररसनीय रूपो रसः स काव्यव्यापारैकगोचरो रसध्वनिरिति, स च ध्वनिरेवेति स एव मुख्यतयात्मेति। —Locana on I 4) Even Ānandavardhana observes about the *Rasādhvani* that it flashes forth on the strength of the expressed sense, but it cannot be the subject of direct mention or expression in words. Hence it is totally different from *vācyaārtha* (तृतीयस्तु रसादिलक्षणं प्रभेदो वाच्यसामर्थ्याक्षिप्तः प्रकाशते न तु साक्षाच्छब्दव्यापारविषय इति वाच्याद्विभिन्न एव। —Dhvan yāloka, *Ṛtti* on I 4)

It is here that a very interesting development occurs in Ānandavardhana's argument. In the next *Kārikā* (I 5), he observes that this meaning itself is the soul of poetry, and as an instance of this, he refers to the famous *Krauñcavadha* episode in the *Rāmāyana*, wherein *Vālmiki's* emotion of grief arising from the separation of the curlew birds assumed the form of a verse (काव्यस्यात्मा स एवार्थस्तथा चादि क्वे पुरा। श्रीञ्चन्द्रबिषयो गोतय शोक श्लोकत्वमागतः ॥)

The *Kārikā* is very controversial, and particularly the words, 'adikaveḥ śokah', are quite puzzling. A lively discussion has taken place as to whether it is really *Vālmiki's* personal sorrow that has led to the composition of the *Rāmāyana*. In other words can literature be based on actual personal sentiments and feelings? *Abhinavagupta* has given a convincing reply that it is not *Vālmiki's* personal sorrow responsible for his poetic utterance, since in the state of grief *Vālmiki* could never create an immortal poem (ननु मुने नो

referring to only Rasa as being the Ātman of poetry (ननु प्रतीयमानस्य मात्मा तत्र विभेद प्रतिपादित न तु रसैवरूपम्, अनेन चेतिहासेन रमस्यैवात्ममतत्त्वमुक्तं भवतीत्याशङ्क्याभ्युपगमेनैवोत्तरमाह—प्रतीयमानस्य चेति । —Locana on I 5) Thus no contradiction is involved

One more clue to Ānandavardhana's attitude towards Rasa can be obtained from his divisions and subdivisions of Dhvani in the second Uddyota of the Dhvanyāloka. He first divides अविवक्षितवाच्यध्वनि into two varieties अपरान्तरमङ्गलमितयाच्य and अत्यन्तरिच्छतवाच्य (Dhvanyāloka II 1). Then he divides विवक्षितमिधेयध्वनि (Mammata's विवक्षितान्तरवाच्यध्वनि) into असलक्ष्यक्रमोद्भूत and क्रमेण द्योतित (i.e. Mammata's अलक्ष्यक्रमव्यङ्ग्य and लक्ष्यव्यङ्ग्यक्रम) in Dhvanyāloka II 2. He further observes that when Dhvani is principal, it is akrama and admits the varieties of Rasa, Bhāva, Rasābhāsa, Bhāvābhāsa, Bhāvaprasānti etc. (रसमास्तदाभासतत्प्रशान्त्यादिरक्रमः । ध्वनेरात्माङ्गिभावेन भासमानो व्यवस्थितः । —Dhvanyāloka II 3) Thus in the whole scheme of Ānandavardhana's Dhvani, Rasa and its varieties like Bhāva form one division called Alakṣyakrama, though it is the most important division of Dhvani, where Dhvani is the Angin or principal. Here obviously Ānandavardhana has in mind those cases of poetry wherein Rasa Bhāva etc. are subordinate, and hence only serve the purpose of Alamkāras such as Rasavat, as pointed out earlier. Thus Dhvani is according to Ānandavardhana a wider concept and embraces Rasa Bhāva etc., but if we want to perceive the real essence of Dhvani it will be found in Rasa and Bhāva only. Hence he emphatically says ध्वनेरात्माङ्गिभावेन भासमानो व्यवस्थितः ॥ We must not miss the real force and import of these words. As Abhinavagupta explains it, there is no poetry without Rasa, but where Rasa is the dominating factor, it produces greater poetic charm (स च रसादिध्वनिर्व्यवस्थित एव न हि तच्छून्यं काव्यं किञ्चिदस्ति । यद्यपि च रसेनैव सर्वं जीवति वाच्यम्, तथापि तस्य रसस्यैवधनचमत्कारात्मनोऽपि कुतश्चिदशास्त्रप्रयोजकीभूतादधिकोऽसौ चमत्कारो भवति । —Locana on II 3) Ānandavardhana again observes that where the various words, meaning, and Gunas, Alamkāras etc. lending charm to them converge in giving rise to Rasa, Bhāva etc., then only we have the real province of Dhvani (वाच्यवाचकचारुत्वहेतूनां विविधात्मनाम् । रसादिपरता यत्र स ध्वनेर्विषयो मतः ॥ —Dhvanyāloka II 4) Thus he almost equates Rasa with Dhvani, the best variety of poetry.

Having established this identity between Rasa and Dhvani Ānandavardhana goes straight ahead and defines poetic concepts like Gunas and Alamkāras only with their reference to Rasa—समर्थमवलम्बन्ते ये अङ्गिन ते गुणा स्मृताः । अङ्गाधितास्तत्त्वलङ्कारा मत्तया षट्कादितः ॥ —Dhvanyāloka II 6, and adds that अङ्गिनम् अयम् here means रसादिप्रधानम् । अयम् proving his intention beyond doubt. He had already stated

that both words and their primary meanings subordinate themselves to produce an extraordinary kind of meaning in poetry known as Dhvani (पदार्थं वृत्ता वा नन्दनमुपसर्जनोद्भूतस्वार्थो । व्यङ्ग्यं वाच्यविशेषः स ध्वनिरिति मूर्तिमि कति ॥ —Dhvanyāloka I 13). Thus all aspects of poetic beauty, viz words, meanings, Guṇas, Alamkāras, etc have their justification not in themselves, but only because they culminate in Dhvani or Rasa. Even Samghaṭanā or the specific arrangement of words, phrases, etc has its substratum in Guṇas like Mādhurya, and suggests Rasas only— गुणानाश्रित्य तिष्ठन्ता माधुर्यादीन्व्यनक्ति सा । रसान् तन्निवम हतुर्विचय वस्तुवाच्यया ॥ —Dhvanyāloka III 6. The propriety of vaktr etc regulating Samghaṭanā is again based on its relation to Rasa and Bhāva. Even the composition of a whole poem like the Rāmāyana and the Mahābhārata is to be planned with a view to suggest Rasa, and all its parts like the Sandhis, Sandhyangas, figures, etc are to be made the vehicles of Rasa—vyañjanā (III 10-14). Even the Vṛttis (modes or styles) are to subserve the purpose of Rasa (रसायनगुणत्वन व्यङ्ग्यहाराज्यं शब्दयो । ओचित्यवायस्ता एता वृत्तयो द्विविधा स्थिता ॥ —Dhvanyāloka III 33). Not only this, but even Guṇabhūta-vyangya, which is supposed to be a rather inferior variety of Kāvya, attains the exalted status of Dhvanikāvya, provided it has a proper modicum of Rasa, Bhāva, etc (प्रकारोऽयं गुणीभूतव्यङ्ग्योऽपि ध्वनिरूपताम् । घटे रसाद्योता, Anandavardhana again tells us that the development of Rasa, Bhava, etc makes poetic composition an almost endless matter, and that poets must avail themselves of it (युक्त्यानयानुसृतव्यो रसादिबहुविस्तर । ध्वनोऽप्यनन्तता प्राप्त वाच्यमार्गो यदाश्रयात् ॥ —Dhvanyāloka IV 3). Not only this, but the same old ideas in poetry assume a novel appearance, they possess a varied charm because of the inclusion of Rasa in them, like trees appearing new in every spring season (दृष्टपूर्वा अपि ह्यर्था वाच्ये रसपरिहृतात् । सर्वे नवा इवामान्ति मधुमास इव दुमा । —Dhvanyāloka IV 4). This idea of the importance of Rasa is illustrated by Anandavardhana with a detailed examination of the Rasas in the Rāmāyana and the Mahabharata. Finally he says that if poets go on composing their works with proper attention to Rasa and Bhāva, etc, then even thousands and thousands of masters of speech are not going to exhaust worldly life in their compositions, it is as rich as the source of all the worlds (रसभावादिसम्बद्धा यद्यौचित्यानुसारिणी । अस्वीयते वस्तुगतिदेश-कालादिभेदिनी ॥ वाचस्पतिसहस्राणा सहस्रैरपि यत्नत । निबद्धा सा क्षय नैति प्रवृत्तिर्जगतामिव ॥ —Dhvanyāloka IV 9, 10).

This detailed comparison of the concepts of Rasa and Dhvani throughout the Dhvanyāloka leaves no doubt in our minds that Anandavardhana, the greatest advocate of the Dhvani school, did not really intend to distinguish them as two entirely different con-

cepts. What he intended was to fuse them in an inextricable manner with the result that a poem abounding in Rasa automatically suggested that Rasa, and this amalgamation, this inseparable blending of Rasa and Dhvani, became the hallmark of the best poetry in the language. In a sense, Anandavardhana restored to Bharata's concept of Rasa that glory which it had lost for quite a long time, and Abhinavagupta cemented the two concepts of Rasa and Dhvani, following the two great masters.

'SĀNTA RASA'

- By

R T VYAS

Beginning from the Bharata's Nāṭyaśāstra upto the times of Dandin, and Bhāmaha eight Rasas were recognised and treated extensively

Bharata speaks of these eight Rasas —

शृङ्गारहास्यक्रुण्णरोद्वीरभयानका ।

वीमत्साद्भुतसज्जी चेत्यष्टौ नाट्ये रसा स्मृता ॥

(Nāṭya Śāstra 6-15)

and their sthāyins are —

रतिर्हासश्च शोकश्च क्रोधोत्साही भय तथा ।

जुगुप्सा विस्मयश्चेति स्थायिभावा प्रकीर्तिता ॥

(Nāṭya Śāstra 6-17)

Abhinavagupta indicates that later interpolations and changes in Bharata's texts were effected by some advocates of Sānta Rasa as follows —

वीमत्साद्भुतशान्ताश्च नव नाट्ये रसा स्मृता ।

and

जुगुप्साविस्मयशमा स्थायिभावा प्रकीर्तिता ॥

Dr V Raghavan, in his book "The Number of Rasas" writes 'Udbhata recognises the Sānta as can be seen from his "Kāvya-lāṅkārasārasaṅgraha" He is thus the first commentator on the Nāṭya Śāstra and the first Alankārika now known to have definitely begun to speak of Rasas as nine in number So, he might have made the necessary alteration in the text of the Nāṭyaśāstra as above shown and as pointed out by Abhinava"

Bharata in his Nāṭyaśāstra, while giving the details of Rasas, like *guna*, *alankāra*, *vṛtti*, the metre, etc does not mention Sānta Rasa anywhere Abhinava in his commentary on Nāṭyaśāstra argues for Sānta Rasa, saying that Sānta is the Prakṛti of all other Rasas, and is implicit, hence Bharata does not mention it explicitly In other words Abhinava does not try to establish Sānta Rasa on the

* Paper read at the Seminar on Rasa-theory held on 19-3-1978 at the Bharatiya Vidyā Bhavan.

strength of Bharata's mention of it, but on that of his silence which he considers as profoundly suggestive and significant

Dr V Rāghavan says in his book "The Number of Rasas" "Suffice to point out here that express mention of Śānta is not found in Bharata. If this is accepted, we can trace the way by which Śānta slowly came to be accepted as a Rasa. We can even explore the possibility of finding some aspects of Śānta in Bharata's accepted text. Bharata, it must be borne in mind, handles the whole world and analyses human psychology to a great extent and it will be a wonder if he was to be entirely innocent of that part of human activity which is the sphere of Śānta Rasa. The absence of Śānta in theory does not, however, mean the absence of poetry or drama with the quietistic motif. To suppose so would be as absurd as to think that before Rasadhvani was formulated as the soul of poetry, no great poetry existed. As Anandavardhana points out, the Rasa of the great epic, the Mahabhārata, is Śānta. The Rsis, the fourth puruṣārtha or Mokṣa, the third and fourth Āsramas of the Vānaprastha and the Samnyāsin—these were already parts and sublime parts of Kāvya such as the Raghuvamśa and Nāṭakas such as the Śākuntala. Bharata, himself a sage, gave the Nāṭyaśāstra to an assemblage of sages. Bharata, therefore, could hardly have lost sight of the Rsis, the forests, tapas, etc. As a matter of fact Bharata does mention aspects of this Śānta Rasa and its attendant conditions. An emotion is recognised as Rasa if it is a sufficiently permanent major instinct of man, if it is capable of being developed and delineated to its climax with its attendant and accessory feelings and if there are men of that temperament to feel imaginative emotional sympathy at the presentation of that Rasa, and Bharata, having stated all this, says that a certain drama may have its theme or purpose in sama, it certainly means that Bharata has landed, though unconsciously, on the Śānta Rasa. Bharata says in the genuine text

वचिदुर्म वचिदुर्मोहा वचिदुर्म वचिदुर्म ॥

दुःखार्तानां श्रमार्तानां शोकार्तानां तपस्विनाम् ॥

(Bharata's Nāṭya Śāstra 1 106)

विश्रान्तिजनन काले नाट्यमेतद् भविष्यति । (B N 1 115)

बह्वर्षीणां च विज्ञेय नाट्य वृत्तान्तदर्शनम् ॥ (B N 1 121)

Abhinava Gupta points out another instance of Bharata's awareness of the element of Śānta. It refers to the virāgins, to whom only dramas depicting the Mokṣa can have appeal —

बुध्यन्ति तरुणा कामे विदग्धा समयाश्रिते ।

अयं ध्वर्यपराश्चैव मोक्षेष्वयं विरागिणः ॥

(B.N 27 59)

Bharata also speaks of dramas based on Dharmākhyānapurāṇa to which the aged, wise and learned persons respond —

धर्माख्यानपुराणेषु वृद्धास्तुष्यन्ति नित्यतः । (B.N. 27.61)

Moreover, while describing Nirveda, Bharata refers to a kind of it that is born of Tattvajñāna, and defining Dhṛti he speaks of śruti, vijñāna, gurubhakti, and 'śaucācāra as some of its Vibhāvas, and they pertain to Śānta Rasa. About Mati, he says that it is born of Nānāśāstravicintana, when Bharata equates Nāṭya with Trailokyā-nukarana, he could not have overlooked śama etc which are a noble part of human life

These instances simply prove that Bharata did recognise śama as an element of human psychology, but he seems to be of the opinion that it can not possibly be the leading Rasa in drama. There was no drama before him that was produced only for the motif of Mokṣa. Unlike Bhayānaka, Bībhatsa and Adbhuta, which may be shown as Anga Rasas and not as Angins, the Śānta is not of a wide appeal. Following this line, some Ālankārikas consider śama as almost impossible, for the beginningless Avidyā producing Rāga and Dveṣa, the ground for eight Rasas, cannot be uprooted for good. The Avalokākāra on Daśarūpaka states —

“अन्ये तु वस्तुतस्तस्याभावं वर्णयन्ति, अनादिकालप्रवाहाद्यातरागद्वेषयोद्वेष्टेतुमशक्यत्वात्” ।

But this is not true, for there have been and are sages, who have successfully attained śama. Such sages are however, very rare, and hence even Abhinava is obliged to say that Śānta is auxiliary in Nāgānanda. Generally drama is for recreation, a Dṛśya and Śravya Kṛīḍānyaka which is vinodajanana, and hence Bharata emphasises the fact that the Nāṭya will deal mainly with worldly prosperity and gaiety etc —

अत एव शान्तस्य स्वाधिक्येऽप्यप्राधान्यम् । जीमूतवाहने त्रिवर्गसम्पत्तेरेव परोपकृतिप्रधानाया फलत्वात् । अनेनैवाशयेन नाट्यफलसंगे बध्यते “श्रद्धाविलासादिभिर्गुणैरिति, अनेन हि श्रद्धाविलास प्रधानमपेक्षामोत्तरं सर्वं चरितं सकललोक हृदय सबाद सुन्दरप्रयोजन नाटके निवेशयितव्यमित्युक्तम् । (Abhinava's commentary on Nāṭyaśāstra)

There are some Ālankārikas who object to Śānta only in Nāṭya, for it requires the action of a Rasa through its Anubhāvas, which is not possible in the case of Śānta Rasa, which according to them, is devoid of all activity. But the Śravyakāvya can describe the Śānta Rasa, for what cannot be acted can at least be described. The Avaloka on Daśarūpaka states —

ननु शान्तसस्यानभिनेयत्वात् यद्यपि नाट्येऽनुपवेशो नास्ति तथापि सूक्ष्मातीतादिवस्तूना सर्वेषामपि शब्दप्रतिपाद्यताया विद्यमानत्वात् वाच्यविषयत्व न वार्यते ।

In this regard, a remarkable attempt is made by Anandavardhanācārya to establish that the main Rasa of Mahābhārata is Śānta —

महाभारतेऽपि शास्त्ररूपे काव्यच्छायां न्वयिनि दृष्णिपाण्डवविरसावसानवैभवं सदायितो
समाप्तिमुपनिबध्नता महामुनिना वैराग्यजननतात्पर्यं प्राधान्येन स्वप्रबन्धस्य दर्शयता मोक्षलक्षण
पुरुषार्थं शान्तो रसश्च मुख्यतया विवक्षाविषयत्वेन सूचित । ततश्च शान्तो रसो रसान्तरेर्मोक्षलक्षण
पुरुषार्थं पुरुषार्थोऽस्ति दुपसर्जनत्वेनानुगम्यमानोऽङ्गित्वेन विवक्षाविषय इति महाभारततात्पर्यं
सुव्यक्तमेवावमासते । अथ च निगूढरमणीयोऽर्थो महाभारतावसाने हरिवशवर्णनेन समाप्तिं विदधतः
तेनैव कविवेद्यसा दृष्ण द्वैपायनेन सम्यक् स्फुटीकृत । अनेन चार्थेन संसारातीति तत्त्वान्तरे भक्त्यतिशय
प्रवर्तयता सकल एव संसारिको व्यवहार पूर्वपक्षीकृतो न्यक्षेण प्रकाशते । पाण्डवादिचरितवर्णनं
यापि वैराग्यजननतात्पर्याद् वैराग्यस्य च मोक्षमूलत्वान् ।

These bold remarks of Anandavardhana are very illuminating. In connection with this passage of Anandavardhana in Dhvanyāloka, Dr K. Krishnamurthy in his work "Essays in Sanskrit Criticism" observes "Anandavardhana thinks that the final note of the Mahābhārata is an unmistakable pointer as to the intention of Vyāsa, which is to emphasise the need for cultivating a sense of detachment towards worldly pleasures. However, promising they may look in the beginning, they are bound to land one in an abyss of despair in the long run. When the greatest heroes could not escape their inevitable doom, how much more true this must be in the case of ordinary men!"

"To get over the inevitable doom, there is only one succour, and that is in following the path of Mokṣa or Supreme Beatitude

"Such is the impression one gets finally by reading the concluding episode of the Mahābhārata. When we look upon the epic as a Śāstra, we say that its central teaching is Mokṣa as Parama Puruṣārtha or ultimate value. This has the support of all traditional commentaries on the great epic. But when we look upon it as a Kāvya, we would state the same truth differently, and say that the dominant sentiment of the Mahābhārata is Śānta or tranquillity."

The intention of the sage Vyāsa becomes evident when he states often the meanness of worldly pleasures and the insuperable state of "Tṛṣṇāḥkṣayasukha", in verses like—

यथा यथा विपश्यति लोकतन्मसारवत् ।
तथा तथा विरागोऽत्र जायते नात्र संशयः ॥

and

यच्च काममुख्यं लोके यच्च दिव्यं महत्सुखम् ।
तृष्णाक्षयमुख्यत्वं ते नार्हतं योऽरातो कलाम् ॥

The Candrikākāra on Dhvanyāloka says Śānta spoken of by Anandavardhana is certainly admissible as a Rasa, but it can appear

only as an anga rasa in a Prāsangika itivṛtta and not as the main rasa in an ādhikārika itivṛtta

But Abhinavagupta does not agree with this view of Candrikākāra and establishes that Śānta can be a leading Rasa in poetry and drama both, as we shall see later on

The objection of these Alankārikas to Śānta being a leading Rasa was mainly due to the fact that the early drama dealt with Arthakāma as Phala and hence eight Rasas only

But how in India especially Śānta Rasa could be kept out of that noble human activity which goes to make up literature? Apart from Mahābhārata as we have seen already, more and more poetic and dramatic compositions became the means of representation of Dharma and Mokṣa as Phala—the aim of life Aśvaghoṣa's "Buddhacarita" and "Saundarananda" are the specimens of spiritual Kāvya and his Śāriputraprakaraṇa, and an allegorical drama, the fragments of which were discovered by Dr Lüders, mark the beginning of religious or spiritual drama Dr V Rāghavan, therefore holds, that the Buddhist and Jain poets and dramatists might have been responsible for the introduction of philosophical poems and plays, for making Śānta the Angī Rasa of the Ādhikārika itivṛtta

The advent of Nāgānanda in the field of Indian Literature is a momentous event from the point of view of Śānta Rasa, for it started the regular and earnest discussion on Śānta Rasa in Sanskrit literary criticism

The critics of Śānta say that śama is total absence of feelings and activities, and such a state of inaction is not stageable But this is not wholly true Dr Raghavan rightly observes that the state of absolute cessation of action is only the climax, the Paryantabhoomi, and this certainly can not be shown But the Paryantabhoomis of all other rasas sail in the same boat Śṛṅgāra is not denied as a rasa because Samprayoga is unfit to be shown on the stage So, also Murder and Raudra So, the acceptance of Śānta does not mean the attempt to present the impossible cessation of action but means only the portrayal of an ardent spirit in search of Truth and tranquility The manifold efforts of the Yata māna his trials, his victories over passions—these can be portrayed with great interest Even one who has attained Truth can be shown and there will be no lack of action in him A Siddha like Janaka will be doing lokasangraha The Gītā speaks of many a thing which a Sthitaprajña does

Bharata's not mentioning the Vibhāvānubhāvasamcāribhavas and the vṛtti, Jāti, etc of Śānta is also not a valid objection Abhi-

nava has given all these The interpolated Śānta text in Bharata's Nāṭya Śāstra gives Tattvajñāna, Vairāgya, Āśaya Śuddhi as vibhāvas of Śānta Its Anubhāvas are Yama, Niyama, austerities and allied practices Almost all Bhāvas can be Śānta's Sañcārīs Abhinava counts more vibhāvas like the contact of Saints, previous good actions, God's grace, study of scriptures, etc One can also enjoy the Anubhāvas of Śānta like, slow disappearance of passion, anger, avarice, infatuation vanity, envy and other evil propensities More-over in all Bhāvas—the Nirveda and Jugupsā for worldly objects, Dhṛti, Mati, Utsāha of the Dayāvīra type, Rati for god as Bhakti and faith stand out prominently

The next objection to Śānta is that unlike all other Rasas, Śānta cannot be relished by humanity generally Avalokakāra on Daśa-rupaka says —

न च तथाभूतस्य शान्तस्य सहृदया स्वावयितार सन्ति ।

In answer to this objection Ānandavardhana says that Śānta may not appeal to the masses, but still there will be some great persons to relish it —

यदि नाम सर्वजनानुभूयगोचरता तस्य नास्ति नैतावताऽसौ अलोकसामान्यमहानुभाववित्त-
युक्तिवत् प्रतिक्षेप्तुं शक्य ।

Abhinava further develops this argument and says that if Śānta can not be relished by some and on that ground it is excluded from the community of Rasas, then on the same ground Śrangara also should be excluded for it does not have any appeal to the detached persons —

ननु तत्र हृदयसंवादाभावादस्वमानतैव नोपपन्ना क एवमाह नास्तीति ? यत् प्रतीयत एवेत्यु-
क्तम् । ननु प्रतीयते, सर्वस्य श्लाघास्पदं न भवति । तर्हि बीजरागाणां शृङ्गारो न श्लाघ्य इति सापि
रसाध्यवन्ताम् ।

Dr Raghavan says "All these arguments cannot disprove the possibility of Śānta as a Rasa capable of relish by spectators It is bound to be uncommon, all the same, it is as true as the inner ex-perience and the higher life of the mystic which is not in common with the life of ordinary worldly men If Śama is not only a part of the world but a glorious part of it also, it should also be so of the drama" Abhinava says that literature, poetry and drama can-not restrict themselves to the Trivarga only but must get ennobled by embracing the fourth and the greatest Puruṣārtha, Mokṣa also The attitude to mokṣa is Śama and Śānta is the Rasa of the drama which depicts the endeavour to attain that To say that it is im-possible to exterminate Rāga and Dveṣa is to insult humanity, its heritage of philosophy and the long chain of its spiritual leaders Surely there are men of that kind who can respond to a Śānta

drama. That hedonists are not able to sit through it cannot disprove Śānta. It will be a pity if literature, and drama in particular, cannot rise beyond the level of mere entertainment and gaiety. It has been accepted that all cannot respond to all Rasas. If vītas delight in Śṛṅgāra, Vītarāgas delight in Śānta. Bharat also says

उत्तमाद्यममव्याना सक्तीर्गन्ता नु सक्तदि ।

न शक्यमद्यममर्जितुमुत्तमाना विचेष्टितम् ॥ (N Ś 27.58)

There is a continuous chain of literature that depicts the Śānta Rasa. We have already seen Ānandavardhana's arguments to establish that Mahābhārata stands a model of great Kāvya (epic) of Śānta. Next in importance to the Mahābhārata are the Śānta Rasa poems of Aśvaghoṣa, the Buddhacarita and the Saundarananda. The following is a list of Śānta Rasa Kāvya —

- 1 The Rājataranginī (1.23) of Kalhaṇa mentions Śānta as its Rasa. No great history can escape the ultimate suggestion of the noble Śānta Rasa.
- 2 Kaivalyavallī Parinayavilāsa by Travancore Prince
- 3 Jñānamudrāparinaya Kāvya
- 4 Hansasandesa
- 5 Indudūta by Vinayaviṣayaganī
- 6 Chetoduta
- 7 Bhaktidūti by Kālīprasād
- 8 Manodūta by Viṣṇudāsa

Dr Raghavan gives the names of eighteen writers who have similarly written Kāvya of Śānta Rasa.

Aśvaghoṣa's dramas seem to be the earliest to have Śānta as their dominant Rasa. His Śāriputraprakaraṇa deals with the conversion of the hero to the Buddhist faith. And Dr Luder's find, a fragment, is an allegorical spiritual drama. Kṛṣṇamīśra wrote an Advaita allegory—The Prabodhacandrodaya, about the eleventh century A D. This drama inaugurated a regular category of philosophical and allegorical plays, such as —

- 1 Moharajaparajaya by Yasapala
- 2 Amṛtodaya—by Gokulnāth
- 3 Sankalpasūryodaya by Venkatanatha
- 4 Caitanyacandrodaya by Kavikarnapura

Dr Raghavan gives a list of thirty eight similar dramas. Ramanujacārya's career is dramatised in "Yatirājavijaya" by Varadācārya of Kāncī. "Śivabhaktānandanātaka" is on a Śiva-bhakta. Such dramas, being based on real personalities are more truly spiritual for they are more effective than the presentation of abstract spiritual concepts as characters on the stage.

Thus dramas on the life of Saints and devotees are Śānta Rasa plays

The *Bhartraharīnirvedanāṭaka* by Harihara is a Śānta play of a superior conception. The author in *Prastavanā* says that it is a Śānta Rasa play and that Śānta is the only lasting Rasa —

श्रीहरिहरप्रणीतेन भर्तृहरिनिर्वेदान्ता शान्तरसप्रधानेन नाटकेन तानुपासितुर्माहे ।
शृङ्गारादिरनेकजन्ममरणश्रेणीसमासादितं
एणीदृक् प्रमुखं स्वदीपकसखैरालम्बनैराजितं ।
अस्त्यन क्षणिको रस प्रतिपल पर्यन्तवैरस्यभू
ब्रह्माद्वैतमुखात्मक परमविश्रान्तो हि शान्तो रस ।

Many *Alankārikas* accept Śānta Rasa. *Udbhata* is the earliest among them who mentions in his *Kāvyaāṅkārasārasaṅgraha* *Bhaṭṭa Lollata* believed that Rasas are Ananta, for all minor Bhāvas are Rasas according to him. *Sankuka's* attitude towards Śānta is not known. *Rudraṭa* recognises Śānta and gives *Samyag jñāna* as its *Prakṛti* or *Sthāyin* —

सम्यग्ज्ञानप्रवृत्ति शान्तो विगतेच्छानादको भवति ।

Ānandavardhana accepts Śānta as a Rasa, and considers *Nāgānanda* as its illustration and gives *Trsnāksayasukha* as its *Sthāyin*. *Rājasekhara's Kāvyaṁimānsā* might have recognised the Śānta, for he follows *Rudraṭa*, but the chapter on Rasa is lost. *Bhaṭṭa Tota* accepts Śānta, as is indicated by *Abhinava*. His *Kāvyaakautuka* contains a detailed examination of the objections to Śānta and gives a brilliant exposition of it as the greatest Rasa —

मोक्षफलत्वेन चायं परमपुरुषार्थनिष्ठत्वात् सर्वरसेभ्यः प्रधानतमः । स चायमस्मदुपाध्याय
मृतातन काव्यकौतुके अस्माभिश्च तद्विवरणे बहुतरुतनिर्णयः ।

Abhinavagupta in his *Locana* and *Abhinavabhāratī* accepts Śānta as the greatest Rasa and discusses it at length. *Kṣemendra* accepts it as is evident from his *Aucityavicāracarcā*. *Bhoja* accepts it in his two works viz *Sarasvatikanṭhābharana* and *Śṛṅgāraprakāsa*.

Thus we can discern definite stages of the acceptance of Śānta as a Rasa. *Bharata*, *Dhanañjaya* and *Dhanika* who are writers on dramaturgy proper do not accept Śānta as a Rasa. The second stage in the history of Śānta is represented by *Candrikākāra*, who grants Śānta as a Rasa but considers that it cannot be the chief Rasa. The third stage is marked by its acceptance as a leading Rasa but only in *Kāvya*, in *Nāṭya* it should be only *Prāsangika*. In the fourth and the last stage Śānta is recognised as main Rasa both in *Nāṭya* and *Kāvya*, and as the greatest Rasa, synthesising all the Rasas in itself.

Dr V Raghavan says "Śānta is the Rasa of *Sama* or *Tattva-jñāna* or realisation of the *Ātman*. The whole world may be its

uddīpanavibhāva Its Almabanavibhāva is, in case of Bhakti, a personal God, and in other cases, the Ātman or Brahman, its varṇa or colour is white-Svaccha, its presiding deity is any enlightened soul or Viṣṇu or the Brahman, its Vṛtti is either Sāttvati or Kāśikī, its guṇa is Prasāda, for Śama is the tranquillity and transparence of citta-vṛtti or antahkaraṇa, but Hemacandra in his Kāvyaṇuśāsana considers that in Śānta Mādhurya guṇa exists in a high degree —

द्रुतिहेतुमाधुर्यं शृङ्गारे, शान्तकणक्षिप्रलभेषु सातिशयम् ।

Jagannātha is also of the same opinion for he thinks that the greatest amount of Mādhurya is found in Śānta —

नत्र शृङ्गारे सयोगाद्ये यन्माधुर्यं ततोऽतिशयं कण्ठे, ताम्बा क्षिप्रलभे, तैम्योऽपि शान्ते ।

Mammata in his Kāvyaaprakāśa says —

आह्लादकरं माधुर्यं शृङ्गारे द्रुतिकारणम् ।

कण्ठे क्षिप्रलभे तच्छान्ते चातिशयान्वितम् ॥

These Alankārikas seem to have in their mind—the Brahmānanda being the end of Śānta Rasa Verily bliss unalloyed must be sweetest—Madhuratama.

It is stated that Bharata did not accept Śānta as a Rasa, hence he has not given its Sthāyin But Abhinava and some other Alan-kārikas say that in the statement of Samcāris, Bharata has mentioned Nirveda first which is Sthāyin of Śānta, and Nirveda is amangala So, according to Dehalideepanyāya—a lamp on threshold—Bharata wanted to suggest the existence of Śānta Rasa But evidently this is far-fetched and need not be taken seriously

Dr V Raghavan says “There is no doubt on this point that the section on Śānta opened the section on Rasas and appeared even before Śṛṅgāra in some old Manuscripts which Abhinava consulted —

तथा चिरन्तनपुस्तकेषु स्वायिभावान् रसत्वमुपनेष्याम इत्यनन्तरं शान्तो नाम शमस्यादिभावा-
त्मक इत्यादि शान्तलक्षणं पठ्यते ।

Abhinava made out a case on the basis of this priority of Śānta in the treatment of Rasas He says that it is because the Sthāyin of Śānta is Sthāyin par-excellence, being the Ātman itself on which arise the comparatively less basic Sthāyins, Rati etc and because all Rasāsvāda is of the form of Śānta, being Alaukika and free from worldly links Śānta is the greatest Rasa and hence it is dealt with in the beginning —

शान्तस्य सर्वप्रवृत्तिव्यभिधानाय पूर्वमभिधानम् ।

Udbhat, Dr Raghavan thinks, may be responsible for introducing the Śānta texts in the Nāṭyaśāstra

If śāma is accepted as Sthāyin of Śānta the number of Bhāvas given by Bharata would be fifty instead of forty nine. So, some hold Nirveda as the Sthāyin of Śānta, for it figures in the fortynine given by Bharata

Rudraṭa holds Samyagnāna as the Sthāyin of Śānta. Ananda-vardhana gives Tṛṣṇākṣayasukha as its Sthāyin —

शान्तश्च तृष्णाक्षयसुखस्य यः परिणोप तत्तत्क्षणो रसः प्रतीयत एव । तथा चोक्तम्—

यच्च कामसुखं लोके यच्च दिव्यं महत्सुखम् ।

तृष्णाक्षयसुखस्यैते महन्तं योऽर्थो कलात् ॥

Mammata accepts Nirveda as the Sthāyin of Śānta —

निर्वेदस्यामगलप्राप्तस्य प्रथममनुपादेयत्वेऽपि उपादानं व्यभिचारित्वेऽपि स्वायित्वाभिधानार्थम्, तेन

“निर्वेदस्यापिभावात् शान्तोऽपि नवमो रसः ।

Some accept Utsāha as the Sthāyin of Śānta, but that being the Sthāyin of Vīra which is based on ego, does not suit well with Śānta. Dayāvira, Dharmavira etc. may be the phases of Śānta

Abhinava says that if we follow this line of thought any of the eight Stayins may be put forward as Sthāyin of Śānta. He states this in a very interesting passage

एव समस्तं वैदुतं पश्यतः (होस्य) विश्वं च शोच्यं पश्यतः (करुण), साक्षात् च वृत्तम् अन्कारित्वेन पश्यतः (रोद्र), साक्षिणाय असमोहप्रधानं वीर्यमाश्रितवत् (वीर) सर्वस्मात् विषयं सार्यात् विस्मयतः (भयानक), सर्वलोकस्त्रुहणीयादपि प्रमदादेः जुगुप्समानस्य (वीरस्य), अपूर्वं स्वात्माक्षिणयलाभात् विस्मयमानस्य (अद्भुत) मोक्षसिद्धिरिति हास्यदिना विस्मयात्तानां स्वायित्वं निरूपणीयम्”

Dr Raghavan says “The very possibility of each or all of the eight Sthāyins being the Sthāyin of Śānta prevents any one of them being the settled Sthāyin of Śānta. It cannot also be held that according to circumstances, the Sthāyin varies in Śānta. A Multi Sthāyinned Rasa is foreign to the Rasa theory and is an impossibility. The real significance of this view however lies in another direction. It points to the fact that any or all the other Sthāyins become the Vyabhicarins of Śānta. One may pass to Śāma from Rati or Śoka, as a result of broken love, or the death of a beloved person. Aśoka fought the Kalungas and passed from Vīra to Śānta. Therefore any of the eight Rasas or all of them can be the Uddipaka of Śānta. Hence Śārngdeva says that Śāma is present in all Rasas —

शमः सर्वरसेष्वस्ति स्थैर्यत्वे व्यभिचार्यसौ ।

लोके धृङ्गादिपि अष्टसु मध्ये यः कचन रसमनुभवत एव पुनो जमान्तरगुह्यतविशेषः
रात् शम उत्पद्यत इति तत्तद्वसतवधात् शमस्य सर्वरसेषु अस्तित्वम् ।

One view suggests that all the eight can be considered as constituting together the Sthāyin, taking Śānta as a peculiar Rasa —

अन्ये तु पानवरमवत् अविभाग प्राप्ता सर्वे एव रत्यादयोऽत्र स्यायिन इत्याहुः । चित्तवृत्तीनामयुगपद् भावात्, अन्योन्यं च विरोधात् एतदपि न मनोजम् ।

It is true that as Pūrvapakṣa, the whole world is involved in Śānta, but all these form only Vyabhicāriṇs Abhinava says —

तत्त्वज्ञानलक्षणस्य च स्यायिन समस्तोऽयं लोकिवालीविचचित्तवृत्तिवत्ताया व्यभिचारिताम-
प्येति ।

Then which is Sthāyin of Śānta? Abhinava holds that Ātma-jñāna itself is the Sthāyin of Śānta —

कस्तुह्यत्र स्यायी ? उच्यते— इह तत्त्व-ज्ञानमेव तावन्मोक्षसाधन इति तस्यैव स्यायिता युक्ता ।

तत्त्वज्ञानं च आत्मज्ञानमेव । तेन आत्मैव ज्ञानानन्दादिविशुद्धधर्मयोगी परिकल्पितविषयो-
पभोगरहितोऽत्र स्यायी ।

Ātman is the basis and root of all other Sthāyins It is upon the substratum of this ultimate Sthāyin that, as a result of sense-contacts with external objects, the other eight Sthayins are created Behind Rati Hasa etc is the eternal Ātmā Rati and other Sthāyins rise and fall but Ātman is Sthayitama

Therefore it is, says Abhinava, that Bharata does not mention this Śānta Rasa and its Sthāyin Ātmā For it belongs to a higher plane and it would have been improper if Bharata had given it among Rati etc —

तत्त्वज्ञानं तु सकलभावांतरभित्तिस्थानीय सर्वस्यायिम्य स्यायितम सर्वा रत्यादिना चित्तवृत्ती व्यभिचारीभाववन् निसर्गत एव सिद्धस्यायीति तत्र वचनीयम् । अत एव पृथगस्य गणना न युक्ता ।

This Ātman makes all the fortynine Bhāvas, which include Sthayins also Vyabhicāriṇs, but Ātmajñāna never becomes Vyabhi-
cāriṇ anywhere Hence Bharata has not mentioned it People naturally see objects and feel Rati etc But realisation of the Ātman requires this process to be reversed and meditation to be resorted which is not possible for the masses hence Bharata did not mention it

न चास्य आत्मस्वभावस्य व्यभिचारित्वम् असम्भवात् अवैचित्यावहत्वात् अनौचित्याच्च ।
अत आत्मस्वभावः ।

The text on Śānta found in some recensions of Bharata's Nāṭya-śāstra describes Śānta as the Prakṛti and Rati and other Bhāvas as its Vikāras, which rise and fall appear and disappear on the Ātman and ultimately merge in it

न यत्र दुःखं न सुखं न द्वेयो नापि मत्सरः ।
 सप्तमः सर्वेषु भूतेषु स शान्तः प्रयितो रसः ॥
 भावाः विकाराः रत्याद्याः शान्तस्तु प्रकृतिर्मेतः ।
 विकारः प्रकृतेर्जातः पुनस्तथैव लीयते ।
 स्वं स्वं निमित्तमात्माद्य शान्ताद्भावः प्रवर्तते ।
 पुनर्निमित्ताभावे च शान्त एवोपनीयते ॥

Abhinava says that the relish of all Rasas is alaukika, shorn of all mundane associations, and hence *Śāntaprāya*. The bliss realised in *Rasāvāda* is akin to *Brahmāsvāda*. Jagannātha pursued this line and said that *Rasa* is the manifestation of the light of *Ātman* itself when the obscuring elements fall away. Poetry and drama remove the bars and *Ātman* manifests itself:—

“वस्तुस्तु वक्ष्यमाणश्रुतिस्त्वरस्येन भगतावरणा बिदेव रसः ॥

If we apply *Adhyāropāpavādanyāya* here, we may assert that all other Rasas are *adhyāropita* on the *Śānta Ātman*, only to be sublated later, so that *Śānta Ātman* alone remains, as the eternal Reality. All Rasas lead in the end to the one real, most permanent and the greatest *Rasa-Śānta*.

AN OBITUARY

Dr. V. RAGHAVAN

(22 8 1908 — 5 4 1979)

By

K. K. RAJA

We regret to announce the sad and sudden demise of Dr V Raghavan, Retired Professor of Sanskrit, University of Madras on 5 4 1979. He was an eminent Sanskritist and a well known authority on Indian aesthetics and criticism, music and dramaturgy, manuscriptology, the Rāmāyana and Indian culture. On the Śrī Ramanavami day, he presided over a seminar on the Rāmāyana at the Kuppuswami Sastri Research Institute Madras and spoke with emotion about the magnanimous qualities of Rāma, the same night he passed away due to heart failure.

Dr V Raghavan was born on 22 8 1908 at Tiruvarur, in Tanjore district of Tamilnadu, the birth place of Muthuswami Dikṣitar, one of the famous Trinity in Carnatic Music. After his school education he came to Madras and joined the Presidency College and had higher education in Sanskrit under Mahamahopadhyaya S Kuppuswami Sastrigal. Later he was initiated in Research methodology by Sastrigal himself who guided him to wade through Bhoja's encyclopaedic work on literary criticism *Śṛṅgāraprakāśa* and prepare his doctoral thesis on it. This excellent thesis, when published in 1963, won for him the Sahitya Academy Award for Sanskrit.

After his education he worked for a few months in the Saraswathi Mahal Library, Tanjore and then joined the Madras University as an assistant for the newly started project of New Catalogus Catalogorum. Later he was made a Lecturer in the Sanskrit Department to work in the Catalogus section under Prof C Kunhan Raja. The first volume of the *New Catalogus Catalogorum* appeared in 1949. After the retirement of Prof Kunhan Raja Dr Raghavan became the Head of the department and became Professor in 1954. He published the second volume of the *New Catalogus Catalogorum* in 1966 and the revised edition of the first volume in 1963. Dr K. Kunjunn Raja was appointed Associate Editor in 1963 during the period of 1967-69 volumes 3, 4 and 5 were published in quick succession. Dr Raghavan retired from the University in 1967.

end of 1968, and immediately got the Nehru Fellowship for two years from January 1969 to work on a Critical edition of the Sanskrit text of Bhoja's *Śrngāraprakāśa*. Later the Harvard Oriental Series offered to publish the text. More than 800 pages were printed, the rest of the matter still remaining ready for the press, when he passed away.

The work in the *Catalogus Catalogorum* section brought Dr Raghavan into close contact with many a rare Sanskrit text and he became thoroughly familiar with every nook and corner of Sanskrit and allied literature. He published several papers on identity and date problems in Sanskrit literature, not only in his special field of music and criticism but in other fields as well. He was the editor of the *Journal of Music Academy*, and the *Journal of Oriental Research*. He started a Sanskrit dramatic troupe the *Samskrta Ranga*, and staged several classical Sanskrit dramas and some of his own at Madras and other places in India, the *Sanskrita Ranga* was also publishing *annuals* containing research papers on various aspects of Sanskrit Drama and staging.

Dr Raghavan has an honoured place among modern creative Sanskrit writers also. He wrote a *Mahākāvya* called *Muttusvāmī dīksitacarita*, on the life and works of the famous music composer Muthusvāmī Dīkṣitar, in appreciation of this work H. H. Śrī Śaṅkarācārya of Kamakoti Peetham bestowed on him the title of *Kavī-kokila* in 1955. Dr Raghavan was revising it and adding new verses to it now and then. It is a pity that he was not able to see it published during his life time.

He wrote and produced several one-act plays for the All India Radio. *Rasalilā*, *Kāmasuddhī*, *Lakṣmīsvayaṃvara*, *Punarunmeṣa*, *Mahāsvetā*, *Asaḍhasya Prathamadivase* and *Prekṣanakatrayī* (on the lives of three poetesses Vijjīkā, Vikaṣanī and Avantīśundarī). The themes are taken from Purāṇic episodes or legends, but they are given an original turn and copious quotations from classical texts are also introduced. *Naṭipūjā* and *Valmiki-pratibhā* are translations from Tagore. *Vimuktī* is a social play with an allegoric content.

In his long prose play *Anārkalī* he has taken up an Islamic and historical theme. He changed the tragic end to a happy one of the lovers union with the blessings of the Emperor. It strongly advocates cultural harmony and contains detailed discussions about the various religious views. Originally written in 1931, it was first produced in 1968 and published in 1972.

He was the editor of the *Samskrta Pratibhā* published by the Central Sahitya Academy and devoted to modern creative writing in

Sanskrit He has published many short writings of his in this journal.

When the Government of India set up a Commission under the Chairmanship of Prof Sunitikumar Chatterjee to consider the position of Sanskrit education in India and to suggest means of encouraging the development of Sanskrit, Dr V Raghavan was nominated as one of the members. He was one of the most active members of the commission, and made many valuable suggestions. As a result of the Commission's report the Government of India set up a permanent Sanskrit Board of which Dr V Raghavan was made the Chairman. He contributed regular articles in their annual publication, *Current Literature*, surveying the current Sanskrit literature. He was connected with various bodies of the Rashtriya Sanskrita Samsthan — such as the Publication Board. He was nominated as the Chairman of the Sanskrit Vidyapeeth Committee at Tirupati. He was also an active member of the Central Sangeet Nataka Academy and the Central Lalita Kala Academy. For several years he was one of the Secretaries of the All India Oriental Conference, he presided over the Classical Sanskrit Section and the Technical Science and Fine Arts Section, and was the General President when the Conference was held at Srinagar. When the International Sanskrit Association was started, he became its first President. He had planned to go to its third Session at Weimar in May 1979, before death took him away. In 1979 the Sahitya Academy made him an honorary Fellow.

Dr Raghavan has published several books and articles. A detailed account of the bibliography of Dr Raghavan's writings was published at the time of his *Śaṣṭyabdarpuṭi* in 1968. Several Felicitation volumes were also brought out, one of the Adyar Library exclusively devoted to papers from foreigners, one from Motilal Banarsidass, and as a special volume of *Sanskrita Ranga Annual*.

Among his works other than the Bhoja's *Śṅgaraprakāśa* and the *New Catalogus Catalogorum* are *Some concepts of Alamkara Sastra* and the *Number of Rasas* on literary criticism. He edited the *Nṛtta-ratnāvalī* of Jayasena and *Śṅgaramañjarī* by Akbarshah. Popular booklets on *Social play in Sanskrit*, *Lost Rama Plays in Sanskrit*, *Ramayana in Greater India*, *Mechanical Contrivances in Ancient India*, *Treatment of Love in Kālidāsa* etc are well known. His Patel Memorial Lectures on the Saints and Singers of India were published under the title *The Great Integrators*. He has also edited several other interesting Sanskrit works like the *Snusaviṣaya*, *Sarva devavilāsa* (dealing with Madras), *Mudrarākṣasakathasāra* and the *Sahendravilāsa*. In the *Spiritual Heritage of Thyagaraja* he trans

lated the songs and gave an excellent and detailed account of the musical tradition. His contribution to the *Indian Heritage* is also valuable and recognised.

Dr Raghavan had travelled throughout the world. As a member of the Sanskrit Commission he had occasion to visit all parts of India and get firsthand information about the position of Sanskrit Studies. In 1953 he travelled throughout Europe collecting information about Sanskrit manuscripts collections. He also visited U S A , Canada, Russia, Japan, South East Asia and Mexico. Last year he had been to Burma as an expert to advise on Manuscripts preservation. On the basis of the information collected during these visits he wrote books like *Indological Studies in Europe* and *Indological Studies in America*.

Dr Raghavan's demise is an irreparable loss to Sanskrit studies and has created a seat of vacuum which it is not easy to fill. I had the privilege of working with him closely for several years in the New Catalogus Catalogorum in the Sanskrit Department, in various committees and examination bodies, and travelled with him in London and Mexico as well as in various parts of India. He was always ready to help and was full of enthusiasm.

NOTES & NEWS

BHAVAN'S ANCIENT INSIGHTS AND MODERN DISCOVERIES PROJECT

Some important land marks in the progress of the Project

In the year 1977 a Project Outline detailing the nature, scope, methodology and ancient achievements in certain subject fields of Science and Technology along with an elaborate and near-comprehensive list of subjects for correlative research was prepared to form the basis of the work of the A I M D Department

On April 30 and May 1, 1977 a symposium on Ancient Insights and Modern Discoveries was inaugurated. The symposium enabled the Bhavan to identify specific fields for intensive research. Work on Atomic theory, Astronomy and Radio Astronomy was begun. A literature survey of these subjects in printed books and manuscripts is being done. A number of scholars, Indologists and Scientists have evinced great interest in the work and have been assisting us in various ways.

Life and Health Sciences have also equally engaged the attention of the Department. Considerable work of literature survey has already been done. Heuristic research utilising modern sophisticated techniques is being carried out. In particular Liver diseases have engaged the attention of a dedicated group of doctors led by Dr. Ashok B. Vaidya. Citation Index from ancient writings in Sanskrit and other languages is also being done. A Monograph on concepts of health and disease from ancient times to the modern day is being prepared. A survey of household remedies through a questionnaire is currently being conducted. Some of the eminent aged Vaidyas are being interviewed and their wisdom and experience are being recorded for the welfare of prosperity. A Health Research Centre with a multidisciplinary approach to disease is being planned at Bhavan's Andheri Campus. A workshop on Ancient Indian Astronomy was held on the 24 and 25th of March 1979 at Bombay. The following eminent scholars participated in it:

1. Dr. S. M. R. Ansari, Physics Dept., Aligarh Muslim University
2. Dr. Bandyopadhyay, Meteorologist, In Charge, Regional Meteorological Centre, New Alinore, Calcutta

- 3 Dr Gupta R C Associate Professor of Mathematics, Birla Institute of Technology, Ranchi, Bihar
- 4 Dr Rangachari, TIFR, Maths Dept, Colaba, Bombay
- 5 Prof T S Kuppanna Sastry, Madras
- 6 Dr K V Sarma, V V Bandhu Institute of Sanskrit and Indological Studies, Punjab University, Hoshiarpur
- 7 Dr. S R Sarma, Sanskrit Dept, Aligarh Muslim University
- 8 Prof M L Sharma, Jyotish Dept, Sanskrit University, Varanasi
- 9 Dr S D Sharma, Physics Dept, Punjab University, Patiala
- 10 Prof Ajay Mitra Shastri, Dept of Ancient Indian History & Culture, Nagpur University
- 11 Dr Saroj Singh V TIFR, Bombay
- 12 Prof R Sridharan, School of Mathematics, TIFR, Bombay
- 13 Dr B V Subbarayappa, Adviser (Academic), Nehru Centre Worli, Bombay

The Department has recently also taken up on hand two other subject fields (1) Rasa Shastra (Iatro-Chemistry) (2) Environmental Science

A Project like this which is unique naturally depends to a great extent upon the dedicated co-operation from Sanskrit scholars and Scientists. We are glad to say that such co-operation has come in sufficient measure but we would like to appeal to all Sanskrit lovers who can assist us in any manner to contact the undersigned. In particular we require assistance for the new projects we have started. Scholars who are acquainted with manuscript survey, identification of worthwhile subject fields and ability to translate Sanskrit technical matter into English may also correspond with us. Further suggestions regarding subjects that could be in future taken up may also be sent. We also invite papers and other original written material bearing on our subjects for our proposed Journal. Correspondence may be sent to Shri R A Kashyap, Project Officer, Department of Ancient Insights and Modern Discoveries, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan, Munshi Sadan, K M Munshi Marg Chowpatty, Bombay-400 007

The History & Culture of the Indian People

(in Eleven volumes)

Planned, Organised and Directed by Dr K. M. Munshi, President, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan

General Editor R C Majumdar, M A, Ph D., F A S, F B B R A S, Director, History of Freedom Movement in India, Government of India, Ex Vice Chancellor and Professor of History, Dacca University, Hon Head of the Department of History, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan.

Assistant Editors A D Pusalkar, M A LL B, Ph D, and A K. Majumdar, M A, D Phil

This is the first history of India written exclusively by her own people which brings to bear on the problems a detached and critical appreciation. A team of over sixty scholars of repute present herein a comprehensive and up-to-date account of the political, socio-economic and cultural history of the Indian people.

VOLUMES PUBLISHED

Volume I—The Vedic Age (From the earliest times to 600 B C) Price Rs 80

Volume II—The Age of Imperial Unity (From 600 B C to 320 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume III—The Classical Age (320-750 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume IV—The Age of Imperial Kanauj (750-1000 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume V—The Struggle for Empire (1000-1300 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume VI—The Delhi Sultanate (1300-1526 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume VII—The Mughul Empire (1526-1707 A D) Price Rs 90

Volume VIII—The Maratha Supremacy (1708-1818 A D) Price Rs. 90

Volume IX—British Paramountcy and Indian Renaissance (Part I) (1818-1905 A D) Price Rs. 80

Volume X—British Paramountcy and Indian Renaissance (Part II) (1818-1905 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume XI—Struggle for Freedom (1905-1947) Price Rs 80

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED

WITH PLATES, MAPS AND PLANS

BHARATIYA VIDYA BHAVAN

Kalpatti K. M. Munshi Marg, BOMBAY 400 007

BHĀRĀTĪYA VIDYĀ SERIES

Rs.

1.	* विश्वदिग्गज by Buddhaghosācārya, ed. Dharmananda Kosambi ..	16.00
2.	* भरतेश्वर बाहुबलिरास ed Muni Jinavijayaji ..	1 00
3.	* मानदीपिका महाभारततात्पर्यटीका on the उद्योगपर्व by Devabodha, ed Dr. S. K. De ..	4 00
4.	* मण्यदगीता मारतोयदर्शनानि च Mm Anantakrishna Shastri ..	4 00
5.	* चन्द्रलेखाशुद्ध by Rudradāsa, ed Dr. A. N. Upadhye ..	10.00
6.	* गुजराती स्वरव्यञ्जनप्रक्रिया Gujarati translation of Dr. Turner's 'Gujarati Phonology' by Prof K K. Shastri ..	2 00
7.	* वेदवाङ्मयविमर्शिका by Siddhasenadivakara, ed Pandit Shukhlalji ..	20 00
8.	* रसतरङ्गप्रदीपिका by Allarāja, ed Dr R N. Dandekar ..	3.00
9.	* रासकवच by Bhartṛhari with a new commentary, ed. D. D. Kosambi ..	6 00
10.	* Puranic Words of Wisdom, ed Dr A P. Karmarkar ..	2 00
11.	* अमोक्षस्यन्दकप्रह्ण ed Miss Pratibha Trivedi ..	2 00
12.	* वेदभाष्यसार by Bhattoji Dikshita, ed Pandit R. K. Patanakar, Introduction by Prof P K. Gode ..	1.00
13.	* अश्वत्थविचित्र by Kshirasamudravāsīśmīra, ed. Acharya T. A. V. Dikshitar ..	1.00
14.	* कामदोमहोत्सव by Smt Shakuntala Rao Shastri ..	5.00
15.	* बर्धनचरित्र-सूत्रमाग मातङ्गवृत्त ed Prof K K. Shastri ..	4 00
16.	* Sacrifice in Rigveda by Prof K. R. Potdar ..	15 00
17.	* पाण्यपार by Dr Harivallabh C. Bhayani ..	8 50
18.	* मदनमोहना by Shamala Bhat, ed Dr. H. C. Bhayani ..	6 00
19.	* सिंहासनवत्सोरी (Stories 18-22) by Shamala Bhat, ed Dr. H. C. Bhayani ..	8 00
20.	* वेतालप्रबोधि by Shamala Bhat, ed. A. S. Patel ..	8 00
21.	* स्पृहप्रकाश by Prithvichandra (from his धनतत्त्वज्ञानिधि), Part I, critically ed J H Dave ..	12 00
22.	* नरसिंह युगा कविश्री by K M Munshi ..	3 00
23.	* Rgveda Mandala VII—ed and translated into English with Critical Notes and Introduction by Prof H D Velankar ..	20 00
24.	* मद्रवतीश्री अने कस्तुरिचरणी चारता by Shamala Bhat, ed Smt. Indira Merchant and Dr Ramesh Jani ..	10 00
25.	* Deposed King Thibaw of Burma in India 1885-1916 by W. S. Desai ..	7 00
26.	* Syadvādamuktavali or Jainaviseṣatarka and Bhāvasaptatikā by Śrī Yasasvatīgāra ed by Prof S A Upadhyaya ..	3 00
27.	* Vedānta Tatvaloka by Janārdana ed by Acharya T. A V Dikshitar, Introduction in English by Prof S A Upadhyaya and Preface in Sanskrit by Acharya S Subrahmanya Sastri ..	8 00
28.	* The Brahma Sūtras and their Principal Commentaries, Vol. I, by Dr B N K. Sharma ..	35 00
29.	* Manu smṛti with nine commentaries by Medhatithi, Sarvajñanārāyaṇa, Kullūka Rāghavananda, Nandana, Rāmacandra, Manirama, Govindarāja and Bharuci, Vol. I (Adhyāyas 1-2), ed by J H Dave ..	40.00
30.	* Rkṣuktasānti with important Padapāṭha, English Translation, Critical Notes Select Glossary etc by Professor H D Velankar; with an Introduction by Professor S A Upadhyaya ..	27.00
31.	* Bibliography of Theses in the Subject of Gujarati Language and Literature (upto 1970), compiled by Dr N I Pandya ..	1 50
32.	* The Brahma Sūtras and their Principal Commentaries, Vol. II, by Dr B N K Sharma ..	45 00
33.	* Manu Smṛiti Vol II with nine commentaries (Adhyāyas 3-4) Ed by J H Dave ..	60 00
34.	* The Mahābhārata—A Study of the Critical Edition (with special reference to the Suparnakhyāna of the Ādiparvan) by Prof. Mahesh M Mehta ..	12 00
35.	* Cultural Sources from the Veda by Dr Sadāshiv Ambadas Dange ..	15 00
36.	* The Brahma-Sūtras and their Principal Commentaries, Vol III by Dr B N K Sharma ..	120 00
37.	* Manu-Smṛiti, Vol. III with nine Commentaries (Adhyāyas 5-6) Ed by J H Dave ..	50 00

* Asterisked titles are out of print.

* by V. Varadarajan at Associated Advertisers & Printers, 505, Tardeo Arthur Road, Bombay 400 034, and Published by S Ramakrishnan, Executive Secretary, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan, Kulapati K. M. Munchi Marg, Bombay 400 007.

BHĀRATĪYA VIDYĀ

A quarterly research organ of the Bhavan
on all subjects connected with Indian Culture

VOLUME XXXIX No 3
1979



Editors

PROF JAYANTKRISHNA H DAVE M A LL B
PROF S A. UPADHYAYA, M.A.



BHARATIYA VIDYA BHAVAN

BOOMBAY-400 007

Issued in October 1979

of feminine duality may not be unique to ancient Indian culture, its incredibly wide contrast is.

Analysing the Indian mind, Professor Ainslie Embree suggests, "It may be that the literature is the product of a class of men who, valuing asceticism, resented the passion aroused in them by women, or it may be that the complexity of the Indian attitude represents a true understanding of human nature."² This observation well applies to the Buddha's mind vis-a-vis his attitude toward women. As a comprehender of complex human nature he fully understood women's capaciousness, and as an ascetic he recoiled from them.

In his several dialogues with Ananda, the great advocate of women's cause according to Buddhist literature, Gotama displays this contrary attitude:

"Women are soon angered, Ananda; women are full of passion, Ananda; women are envious, Ananda, women are stupid, Ananda; that is the reason, Ananda, that is the cause, why women have no place in public assemblies, do not carry on a business and do not earn their living by any profession."³

Again Ananda sought advice of Gotama lying on his death bed, as to how the monks should behave with women:

"How are we to conduct ourselves, Lord, with regard to women?" "Do not see them, Ananda." "But if we should see them, what are we to do?" "Abstain from speech" "But if they speak to us Lord, what are we to do?" "Keep wide awake, Ananda."⁴

Ram Prasad Chaudhary considers this as a special advice to Ananda 'bidding him beware of his own weakness'.⁵ Chaudhary's observation seems unacceptable on account of lack of further evidence regarding Ananda's weakness for women.

Though the foregoing data reveals Gotama as a male chauvinist, we have some contrary evidence too. He has been considered to be the liberator of women by scholars such as, Kirtisinghe⁶ and Ms I. B. Horner.⁷ Gotama, with his great compassion and deep understanding of complex human nature, could not possibly have denied the capacity of women to attain the highest. Ananda once asked him:

2 Ainslie T Embree, ed, *The Hindu Tradition* (1966, rpt New York Vintage, 1972), p 86

3 Ananda Coomaraswamy, *Buddha and the Gospel of Buddhism* (New York Putnam's sons, 1916), p. 162

4 Christmas Humphreys, *Buddhism* (London Cassell & Co, 1951), p 65

5 Rama Prasad Chaudhary, "Position of Women as in Early Buddhist Monasticism," *Buddhist India*, 1, No 2 (1927), 187-194

6 Buddhadasa Kirtisinghe, "The Buddha and the Basic Human Rights," AP 40, No 1 (1969), 16-20 See also footnote 21

7 I B Horner, *Women Under Primitive Buddhism* (New York: E. P Dutton, 1930), pp 95-117.

WOMEN'S LIBERATOR: BUDDHISM OR THE BUDDHA?

By

JAYANA SHETH

Introduction Commentators and scholars have interpreted Buddha's life and teachings in different ways. They concern themselves with the life and personality of Gotama, or his religion and teachings, or their implications on the ever-changing society since 600 B C.

An inherent risk in interpreting antiquity is the scholars' frequent omission to recognize the spirit in which the ideas were formulated. To be contemporaneous with the period of origination of concepts and philosophies is obligatory for any scholar to arrive at a judicious conclusion.

There is another important aspect of scholarly involvement to be considered. Many researches have been motivated by the emergence of new social, cultural and political problems in their own times. The concurrence of women's liberation in modern times with researches in the area of women's position in different periods of history is not a mere accident. Current issues often generate new interest in the relevant aspects of past ages. A scholar, therefore, has to be cautious not to tilt the balance, the line is thin between zeal and detachment.

Most of the views on 'women and Buddha', few though they may be, depict Buddha as a chauvinist, a liberator, or a confused character.

The writer has here tried to develop a theory that it was not Gotama the Buddha, who was a champion of women's cause or a social reformer, but it was his message that inspired women to know themselves and their place in society. Buddhism therefore was the energizing source for them, and Buddha was the enervating one. However, for those women the founder and his teachings were indistinguishable. For our judicious evaluation today they are distinct from each other.

A woman's position in any society is indicative of the strength of that culture and the evolution of its social pattern.

The ambivalence of ancient Indian attitude toward women has intrigued many a scholar. Either she is adored as a source of life, love and strength, or condemned as a den of vileness. Either she is respected as a mother, an incarnation of the goddess of power, or she is branded as mere chattel¹. On one hand she is worshipped as a deity, by far surpassing the Medieval European code of chivalry, on the other, she is cursed as a sensuous temptress, comparable to legendary sorceresses in the Western Culture. Though the paradox

¹ Johann J Meyer, *Sexual Life in Ancient India* (New York: Barnes and Noble Inc., 1953), p. 463, 518.

EDITORIAL COMMITTEE

Prof. J. H. Dave



Prof. S. A. Upadhyaya

Dr. A. K. Majumdar

CONTENTS

	Page
Women's Liberator Buddhism or the Buddha?— <i>Dr (Smt) Jayana Sheth, Baruch College City University of New York, U S A</i>	1
Sacrifice in the Aranyakas— <i>Dr (Mrs) Indu C Deshpande, Senior Research Fellow, Centre of Advanced Study in Sanskrit University of Poona</i>	15
Religion V/S Science— <i>Dr J L Sharma, Head, Dept of Sanskrit, Vidya Niketan, Pīlani (Rajasthan)</i>	22
Deities in Mīmāṃsā—Verbal or Physical?— <i>Dr K N Chatterjee, Reader in Sanskrit Banaras Hindu University, Varanasi</i>	26
Subhāṣitas from the Mahābhārata— <i>Dr N A Deshpande, Head Department of Sanskrit, Siddharth College, Bombay</i>	31

Are women competent, Reverend Sir, if they retire from household life to the houseless one under the Doctrine and the Discipline announced by the Tathāgata, to attain to the fruit of conversion to attain to the fruit of once returning to attain to the fruit of never returning, to attain to sainthood."

To this Gotama replied that women were competent to achieve all these

Gotama's awareness of the inherent qualities of women lie in uneasy balance with his three flat denials to Mahāpajāpatī who came with five hundred other women to be admitted to the Order and start the Order of Nuns as well when he was in Kapilvatthu. The women seemed determined. A little later, they shaved their heads, put on the robes and walked from Kapilvatthu to Vesālī (where Gotama was then residing), to entreat him afresh. Ananda saw their bleeding bare feet and voluntarily donned guise probably as a testimony of their immense faith, and pleaded their case. After three attempts he finally succeeded in acquiring the permission, provided the women accepted 'eight weighty rules' (garudhamma) that Gotama specified. They were

"(1) a nun even of hundred years standing shall salute a monk and rise up before him, even if he is just ordained (2) a nun shall not spend retreat in a place where there is no monk (3) twice a month a nun shall ask from the Order of the monks the time of Uposathā and the time when a monk will come to give admonition, (4) after retreat, the final ceremony (paṭama) is to be held by the nuns in the assembly both of monks and nuns, (5) certain offences are to be dealt with by both assemblies (6) a novice who has been trained in the six rules for two years is to ask for ordination from both assemblies, (7) a nun is not to rebuke or abuse a monk on any pretext (8) from this day forth utterance of nuns to monk is forbidden, of monks to nuns is not forbidden."

It is obvious, these rigid rules put the nuns in humiliatingly inferior position to the monks. But since the rules seemed conventional and hence unobjectionable, Mahāpajāpatī conceded to them. This entire episode was perhaps the first movement in the world for women's emancipation, complete with rally, negotiations and compromise. May be it was a 600 B.C. version of the burning issue of the 20th century A.D., and therefore more sombre, less demanding and more compromising.

8 *Culla-Vagga* (x 1/3) Henry Clarke Warren *Buddhism in Translation* (1896 rpt. New York Atheneum, 1972) p. 443.

9 Edward J. Thomas *The Life of Buddha* (London: Kegan Paul 1927) pp. 108-109.

of feminine dullity may not be unique to ancient Indian culture its incredibly wide contrast is

Analysing the Indian mind, Professor Ainslie Embree suggests, "It may be that the literature is the product of a class of men who, valuing asceticism, resented the passion aroused in them by women, or it may be that the complexity of the Indian attitude represents a true understanding of human nature"² This observation well applies to the Buddha's mind vis-a-vis his attitude toward women. As a comprehender of complex human nature he fully understood women's capaciousness, and as an ascetic he recoiled from them.

In his several dialogues with Ananda, the great advocate of women's cause according to Buddhist literature, Gotama displays this contrary attitude

"Women are soon angered, Ananda women are full of passion Ananda, women are envious Ananda, women are stupid, Ananda that is the reason, Ananda that is the cause why women have no place in public assemblies, do not carry on a business and do not earn their living by any profession."³

Again Ananda sought advice of Gotama lying on his death bed, as to how the monks should behave with women

How are we to conduct ourselves Lord with regard to women?" "Do not see them Ananda," "But if we should see them, what are we to do?" "Abstain from speech" "But if they speak to us Lord, what are we to do?" Keep wide awake Ananda."⁴

Ram Prasad Chaudhary considers this as a special advice to Ananda 'bidding him beware of his own weakness'⁵ Chaudhary's observation seems unacceptable on account of lack of further evidence regarding Ananda's weakness for women

Though the foregoing data reveals Gotama as a male chauvinist, we have some contrary evidence too He has been considered to be the liberator of women by scholars such as, Kirtisinghe⁶ and Ms I B Horner⁷ Gotama, with his great compassion and deep understanding of complex human nature, could not possibly have denied the capacity of women to attain the highest Ananda once asked him

2 Ainslie T Embree ed, *The Hindu Tradition* (1966 rpt New York Vintage 1972), p 86

3 Ananda Coomaraswamy, *Buddha and the Gospel of Buddhism* (New York Putnam's sons 1916), p. 162

4 Christmas Humphreys, *Buddhism* (London Cassell & Co. 1951), p 65

5 Rama Prasad Chaudhary "Position of Women as in Early Buddhist Monasticism," *Buddhist India* 1 No 2 (1927) 187-194

6 Buddhadasa Kirtisinghe "The Buddha and the Basic Human Rights" AP 40, No 1 (1969), 16-20 See also footnote 21

7 I B Horner *Women Under Primitive Buddhism* (New York E. P Dutton, 1930) pp 95-117

points "to a period when the prosperity of the Buddhist congregation depended heavily on the patronage of one or more Buddhist queens and contribution by ladies of high social rank"¹⁵ He further quotes Rowland, "There are indications that the Buddhist establishments were supported by queens of the ruling house while the kings were followers of Hinduism"¹⁶

* * *

How would one explain the Buddha's mind? On one hand he knew the capacity of women and on the other, he seemed apprehensive of men who would fall victims to the snares of women, or more precisely, to men's own weakness of the mind vis-a vis women. Perhaps Gotama felt this way because he did not possibly forget his own experience as a young prince when he was imbued in 'plethora of female energy'¹⁷

Decrying women's faults has been the most common male defence mechanism, especially of asceticism all over the world in all ages. They paint women dark not because women are really "the living torch illuminating the way to Hell" (*narakamārgadvārasya dīpikā Yogasāstra* II-87), but "because men themselves are unable to control their passions"¹⁸ Gotama seems to confirm the known ascetic attitude, supported partly by his own experience

"Was it possible for a mind like Buddha" wonders Oldenberg "who in the severe determination of renunciation had torn himself away from all that is attractive and lovely in this world was he given the faculty to understand and to value women's nature?"¹⁹ It is inconceivable that such a mind that delved deep into the mysteries of life and successfully sought its meaning, could not comprehend women's nature. He knew it only too well both its strength and weakness. If women seemed stupid to him, he also discerned in them the seeds of sainthood. How well he confirms his understanding, when he consoles aggrieved King Pasendi who mourns the birth of a daughter, "A woman child, O Lord of men, may prove even better off spring than male"²⁰ The compassionate was also a keen observer of the totality of human nature. Combined with his asceticism, it generated in him a seemingly incongruous attitude toward women most emphatically evidenced in his hesitation to admit wo-

15 Alex and Hideko Wayman trans *The Lions Roar of Queen Śrīmala* (New York: Columbia Univ. Press 1974) p. 1

16 *Ibid.*, p. 2.

17 Alex Wayman "Parents of Buddhist Monks" *Bharati* Vol. X & XI 1966-68, 25-35.

18 Altekar pp. 324-325.

19 Oldenberg pp. 164-165.

20 Wayman "Parents", *Bharati* pp. 25-35.

Many of the foregoing episodes are considered legendary. E. J. Thomas believes, there were probably women in the Order even before Mahāpajāpati. He emphasizes that "There is nothing like a history of the nuns... what we know of them directly comes from isolated legends and from the set of regulations in the *Vinaya*"¹⁰ How far can we then take these episodes as a basis to understand the Buddha's attitude toward women? Even if the detailed episodes are legendary, the eight weighty rules are recorded history. It is these rules that reveal the mind of their preceptor.

Following the permission granted to women, the Buddha pronounced his well-known prophecy:

"If Ananda women had not retired from the household life religion would long endure, a thousand years would the Good Doctrine abide. But since Ananda, women have now retired from household life to the houseless one not long will religion endure, but five hundred years Ananda, will the Good Doctrine abide."¹¹

This prophecy came to be partly true. Buddhism did die soon, but only in India, where it was born, it flourishes elsewhere in the world even today. Though Gotama accepted and greatly admired women's support as lay devotees, he was sceptical about the success of the religion if women joined the Order. He compared women's entry with "disease called rust" falling on "flourishing field of sugar cane."¹² At a later date Buddhist, (so also Jain) nunneries are alleged to have been involved in undesirable activities, not conducive to the Order, much to the chagrin of one and all.¹³

In the Buddhist history Visākhā enjoys prime position as a female lay devotee. Her famous eight-point request to Gotama for a permission to help the Order, readily granted, confirms Gotama's admiration for female patronage. She contributed a total of two hundred seventy million for building monasteries, providing food, robes, medicine etc. for both Orders. There were many more such women.

Oldenberg, describing the zealous involvement of Indian women in the activities of the religion, maintains, "The stupendous munificence which met the Buddhist Order at every step, proceeded in great measure, perhaps in the greatest measure from women."¹⁴ Professor Alex Wayman refers to queen Śrīmālā's emphasis on 'good daughters of the family' along with 'good sons of the family' and

10 Ibid., p. 109

11 Culla-Vagga (x 1/6) Warren, p. 447

12 Warren, p. 447

13 A. S. Altekar, *The Position of Women in Hindu Civilization* (Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass 1962), p. 210

14 Hermann Oldenberg, *Buddha His Life His Doctrine His Order* trans. W. Hoe (London: Luzac & Co., 1928), p. 162

points "to a period when the prosperity of the Buddhist congregation depended heavily on the patronage of one or more Buddhist queens and contribution by ladies of high social rank"¹⁵ He further quotes Rowland, "There are indications that the Buddhist establishments were supported by queens of the ruling house while the kings were followers of Hinduism"¹⁶

* * *

How would one explain the Buddha's mind? On one hand he knew the capacity of women and on the other, he seemed apprehensive of men who would fall victims to the snares of women, or more precisely, to men's own weakness of the mind vis-a-vis women. Perhaps Gotama felt this way because he did not possibly forget his own experience as a young prince when he was imbued in 'plethora of female energy.'¹⁷

Decrying women's faults has been the most common male defence mechanism, especially of asceticism all over the world in all ages. They paint women dark not because women are really "the living torch illuminating the way to Hell" (*narakamārgadvārasya dipikā Yogasāstra* II-87), but "because men themselves are unable to control their passions"¹⁸ Gotama seems to confirm the known ascetic attitude, supported partly by his own experience

"Was it possible for a mind like Buddha," wonders Oldenberg "who in the severe determination of renunciation had torn himself away from all that is attractive and lovely in this world, was he given the faculty to understand and to value women's nature?"¹⁹ It is inconceivable that such a mind that delved deep into the mysteries of life and successfully sought its meaning, could not comprehend women's nature. He knew it only too well, both its strength and weakness. If women seemed stupid to him, he also discerned in them the seeds of sainthood. How well he confirms his understanding, when he consoles aggrieved King Pasendi who mourns the birth of a daughter, "A woman child, O Lord of men, may prove even better off-spring than male"²⁰ The compassionate was also a keen observer of the totality of human nature. Combined with his asceticism, it generated in him a seemingly incongruous attitude toward women, most emphatically evidenced in his hesitation to admit wo-

15 Alex and Hideko Wayman trans *The Lion's Roar of Queen Śrīmālā* (New York: Columbia Uni Press 1974) p 1.

16 Ibid p 2.

17 Alex Wayman "Parents of Buddhist Monks" *Bharati* Vol. X & XI 1966 68, 25-35

18 Altekar, pp. 324-325

19 Oldenberg pp 164-165

20 Wayman "Parents", *Bharati* pp. 25-35

men into the Order, his prophecy regarding the shorter life of religion, and the imposition of eight weighty rules on the *bhikkhunis*

Can Gotama, then be called a liberator of women as Kirtisinghe maintains in "The Buddha and the Basic Human Rights" He holds that the Buddha raised women's social status²¹ In *Women in Primitive Buddhism*, Ms Horner portrays Gotama as an emancipator of women Gotama was surely not a social reformer, certainly not a women's liberator He emerged, on the contrary, as a product of his own times confirming superiority of men over women It is understandable that Gotama of 600 B C could not adopt a radical attitude toward women and was a part of then prevailing chauvinistic pattern of society And very naturally so Even in 20th Century A D Western culture, which has no burden of centuries of ancient civilization to carry, and is therefore free and relatively flexible in its pattern and values, one does not find complete equality between men and women

To interpret Gotama as a conscientious levelizer of social system or an emancipator of women, merely because women and *sūdras* found recognition in Buddhism, is an atrocious anachronism In later times, for us, the ignoble position of *sūdras* and women has become target of social criticism, but for Gotama their social position was not a pertinent issue "No one should" Foucher says, 'be more surprised than he (Gotama), should he know of the travesty of his personality and his role" He further exclaims, "Why try to reform a world that is defined as an unpleasant dream"²² It is rightly observed by Mrs Rhys Davids that Gotama's total involvement was with "realizing the Man (*purusa*, *atta*, *satta*)",²³ a spiritual realization, and not with social reformation Enthused by our fervour for the Buddha, we tend to forget the distinction between a religious thinker and a social reformer

Nor was he a pioneer, even a reluctant one, in opening the Order of nuns Jain nuns, who were greatly esteemed, had a precedence over Buddhist Order of *bhikkhunis* He did not even emulate the Jain nuns, on the contrary, they probably provided an additional cause of hesitation for him "They (Jain nuns) must have aroused his curiosity and criticism and influenced his decision"²⁴

Ms Horner having maintained that "what Gotama did for women shines as a bright light in the history of freedom," tries to de-

21 *Prāci-Jyoti*, Vol 8 1972 p 190

22 A Foucher *The Life of the Buddha*, ab & trans., Simone Boas (Conn Wesleyan Uni Press 1963) p 194

23 Caroline Rhys Davids "Preface" to *Women* Horner p. xv

24 *Ibid* p 108.

fend Gotama against accusations of discrimination.²⁵ Being entrapped by her self-created image of Gotama, she offers a spiritual defence which seems weak in its rationale. She inadvertently defeats the advocacy of her champion of women's cause, when she says, "It is possible that he held back, if he did, on account of his already biased, though not culpably prejudiced view of women. He was born a Hindu, and ancestry, tradition and education can not be shaken off simply by the desire to be quit of them."²⁶ She is absolutely right. Gotama WAS the product of the social milieu of his times

* * *

Sufficient evidence has been produced to prove that women's uplift did not emanate from the conscious efforts of Gotama. Despite Gotama, the conservative, women's own efforts brought about a change. They heard Gotama's message of Nirvāṇa, of freedom from dukkha and saṃsāra. Spurred by the self motivation, the alert, the ripe, the ready joined the *Dhamma* Buddhism, and not so much its preceptor, offered an opportunity to women to liberate themselves. Ms Horner, who oscillates between two different theories, here rightly emphasizes the movement as of women's own making. "This movement, if a development so nearly unorganized, unvoiced and unled, may be called a movement, was fostered and accelerated by the innate intelligence of the women themselves, until it was acknowledged that they were what they were silently claiming to be — responsible, rational creatures with intelligence and will."²⁷

A short survey of change in women's position in Indian society from Vedic times to Buddhist period might explain women's deep involvement in the search for freedom.

During the Vedic times about 2000 B C, women had enjoyed complete equality with men. They could perform sacrifices independently, could chant Vedic hymns, and become *rśikās* and *brahmapāṇīs*.²⁸ Some of them wrote hymns which were included in the *Rigveda*.²⁹ *Yajurveda* mentions *Brahmacarya* training both for boys and girls.³⁰ R. W. Frazer pushes a theory that the Aryans lost many women on their journey into India, which gave women a privileged position, they being essential for the survival of the

25 See note 7

26 Ibid. p. 109

27 Ibid. p. 2 emphasis mine

28 Radha Kumud Mookerji: 'Women in Ancient India' in *Women of India* ed. Tara Ali Baig (Delhi: Govt of India 1958) p. 2.

29 Ibid. p. 161

30 Radha Kumud Mookerji: *Ancient Indian Education* (London: Macmillan 1947), p. 57

society³¹ Preceding data explain a unique equality enjoyed by Vedic women unparalleled in any society past or present. The equality, however, seems to be on the decline during the Upanishadic period around 1000 B C. Altekar considers the amalgamation of the Aryan and the non-Aryan groups through marriage as one of the prime causes of the decline in women's status.³² A reference to Maitreyi's (one of — Yājñavalkya's two wives) participation in philosophical discourse at this time is considered an exception rather than a rule.³³ Mookerji mentions dancing and music as special studies prescribed for women. This indicates a lesser emphasis on intellectual and philosophical studies for women.³⁴

By about 500 B C. the subjugation and inferiority of woman in the society was an established fact. *Manusmṛiti* emphasizes total dependence of women on the male members of the family. "In childhood a female must be subject to her father, in youth to her husband, when her lord is dead to her sons, a woman must never be independent."³⁵ Ved Mitra quotes Vasīṣṭha and Baudhāyana

अस्यतन्त्रा स्त्री पुण्य प्रदाना (वसिष्ठ घ सू ५/१)

न स्त्री-स्वातन्त्र्य विद्यते (बीष्मयन घ सू २/३/५०)³⁶

Despite the total dependence of women, initially carved out for her protection which eventually degraded her into subordination, the non-Aryan practice of mother worship, by this time, was equally woven in the texture of the society. Kosambi's theory of the admixture of patriarchal Aryan and matriarchal (or matrilineal) non-Aryan elements paraphrases this characteristic paradox. Lo and behold, the same Manu declares

यत्र नार्यस्तु पुज्यन्ते रमन्ते तत्र देवता ।

यत्रैतास्तु न पूज्यन्ते तर्वास्तत्राफला क्रिया ॥ मनु ३/५६

"Where women are honoured there the gods are pleased, but where they are not honoured no sacred rite yields rewards."³⁷ And Vasīṣṭha believes

वितुर्दशरात माता गौरवेणातिरिच्यते (वसिष्ठ घ सू. १३/१७)

"Mother is thousand times more respectable than father."³⁸

31 R. W. Frazer *Indian Thought Past and Present* (London: Fisher Unwin 1915) pp. 278-279.

32 Altekar p. 344.

33 Frazer p. 286.

34 Mookerji *Education* p. 105.

35 George Buhler trans. *The Laws of Manu* (1886 repub. New York: Dover Pub. 1969) p. 195.

36 Ved Mitra *Ind. & of Dharma Sutra* (New Delhi: Arya Book Depot 1965) part III p. 9.

37 Buhler p. 85.

38 Ved Mitra p. 17 fn.

In spite of the theoretical importance given to women, in reality they were oppressed by the male chauvinistic society. Gotama's message enthused their spirit that was naturally inclined to religion, devotion and love. Their subjugation motivated them to think of freedom both from social and spiritual bondage, and often in that order. They did not have to go too far to find the answer. They heard the Buddha preach, or heard the reports of his teachings. Monks on their daily rounds with alms bowl were welcomed by housewives. They saw Jain nuns and realized that it was not impossible for women to break the shackles. They saw upadhyāyās, lady teachers — who were very few — who could handle learning. And most of all, the simplicity of the Buddha's teachings appealed to them as they did to the general masses of men. Brahminical teachings had become too complicated, and women in general were involved only in ritualistic aspect of an intriguing system of philosophy. So, Buddhism held a promise for women to regain their long lost freedom. They saw it, recognized it, imbibed it. Hordes of women turned up to the call of monks who chanted melodiously

बुद्धं शरणं गच्छामि ।

धम्मं शरणं गच्छामि ।

सद्यः शरणं गच्छामि ।

And they came from all walks of life. Mrs Rhys Davids lists almost all varieties of women. "The bereaved mother, the childless widow, are emancipated from grief and contumely, the Magdalen from remorse, the wife of a *rājāh* or rich man from the ennui of an idle life of luxury, the poor man's wife from care and drudgery, the young girl from the humiliation of being handed over to the suitor who bids highest, the thoughtful woman from the ban imposed upon her intellectual development by conventional tradition."³⁹

In the Order prostitutes like Āmbapālī and Adhakkāsī rubbed shoulders with an intellectual like Dhammadinā, or queenly Khemā, who was almost tricked into encountering the Buddha,⁴⁰ sat along with Kisa Gotamī who joined the Order out of utter remorse at losing her child, and hence her position in society. Upalāvannā was chased out of *samsāra* by competing suitors for her hand, whereas Isidasī was frustrated by three unsuccessful marriages. Some women like Dhammā found it impossible to gain their husbands' consent to join the Order (obtaining husbands' consent was mandatory according to the Order), whereas others like Sundarīnandā were almost pushed into it. Sumangalā was sick of household drud-

³⁹ Frazer p. 287 quotes from *Buddhist Review* July 1909.

⁴⁰ Nalinaksha Dutt "Great Women in Buddhism" in *Great Women of India* ed. Madhavananda and Majumdar (Almora Advaita Ashrama 1953) pp. 257-259.

gery, and Candā joined because she got food to eat. Very often, some were motivated by their family members who were already in the Order. Some joined it together as did Viśākhā and Dhammadinā. Intellectually Dhammadinā proved to be superior to Viśākhā.

Thus each one had different motivation, varied capacity and personality. The Order was thronged by multifarious problems and issues regarding rules of discipline that called for immediate solution and attention, often from Gotama himself. This was a natural outcome of medley of human characteristics. Women displayed both their strength and frailties. The petty actions of nuns generated from curiosity, jealousy and possessiveness, even pride of power and egotism, created an interesting human drama in the Order. "Not all who entered the Order were of the stuff saints are made of"⁴¹

As the later Buddhist history indicates, the outburst of fervour was short lived, many felt lost as the corruption set in. Buddhist nunneries became the cause for greater restrictions on women in general in Indian society. Taking clue from the limitations of these nunneries, later Hinduism prohibited women from joining the ascetic life. The prohibition prevails even today.⁴²

Thus the Order that began as a stepping stone of liberation of women, itself became the cause of loss of freedom.

However, it is interesting to note that during the Buddha's life, the movement brought forth brilliant teachers and preachers such as, Buddhā, Dhammadinā, Vasithī and Patācārā commanding respect and honour from lay people comparable with, and at times surpassing that offered to the monks. Khemā and Upalāvannā were emulated for their spiritual achievements. Many of the nuns became arhans and achieved Nirvāna.

* * *

What was Gotama's attitude towards almswomen since their admission to the Order?

Several changes were made in the disciplinary rules for the nuns, which were either results of the complains from the laity or from the Order itself. When lay people felt that almswomen's actions likened them to those of housewives, they complained and as a result, rules were made to restrict their actions.⁴³ The Laity had an edge over almsmen too. Gotama was always anxious not to dis-

⁴¹ Horner, p. 243

⁴² Altekar, p. 210

⁴³ Horner, pp. 129, 130, 138, 142 et al.

please the laity, as he could ill afford their antagonism and or the loss of their material support

It must be noted here that all queries, requests and complains from the almswomen were transmitted to Gotama only through the monks. He seemed to be in minimal contact with almswomen, with the only exception of Mahāpajāpati. The almswomen's subordination to the almsmen was an obvious carry over of the social convention. Not only that, within each Order, the protocol of teacher — student, superior — subordinate was also strictly observed, — another tradition, no one ever questioned

All this indicates lack of leadership in certain mundane matters where Gotama preferred to be a follower of public opinion and convention, rather than a moulder of it

A living testimony of personal aspirations, attempts and achievements of almswomen is *Therīgāthā* (Songs of the Elders), perhaps the first anthology of women's verses in the world. It is an inspiring collection of verses that sing of peace and spiritual freedom. It records nuns' own efforts to fight against temptations and weaknesses. The resulting success is an emblem of freedom "having torn asunder the mass of darkness". There are single verse effusions of attempts to attain the highest by the help of the wise one's teachings

Sangha⁴⁴

Giving up my house, having gone forth, giving up son,
cattle, what was dear, giving up desire and hatred
and having discarded ignorance, plucking out craving
root and all, I have become stilled, quenched"

More elaborate descriptions of incidents leading to the moment of revelation, defeating death and *Marā* are also found in this collection. Striking example is that of Upalāvannā's twelve verses⁴⁵. But most outstanding is the tantalizing question of *Somā* establishing equality of men and women

What (*hām*) could woman's state do to us when the mind is well-concentrated, when knowledge exists for some one rightly having insight into the doctrine? ⁴⁶

But this is only a solitary outcry. Most of *Therīgāthā*⁴ does not mention equality. Having been recorded, centuries later by male members of the Order, obviously, we do not have many evidences of how strongly women felt about their undue subordination to

⁴⁴ K. R. Norman trans. *The Elders Verses II Therīgāthā* (London: Luzac & Co 1971) p. 3.

⁴⁵ *Ibid.*, verses 224-235 p. 25.

⁴⁶ *Ibid.* p. 9.

almsmen in their routine life in the Order Ms Horner refers to instances where women tried to get Patimokhā and Uposathā rules changed, which required them to report to the almsmen However, Altekar interprets the absence of complains and criticism against men in *Therīgāthā* differently "Women have in this respect undoubtedly shown a greater fairness, chivalry and balanced judgement than men"⁴⁷ May be he is right

We have only 522 extant verses Much that was felt, desired, struggled against and achieved has not probably come down to us. What we have is indicative of women's self help, determination and achievements despite hurdles on the way The Buddha's personal image and the impact of his teachings worked wonders Obviously, the women also being the products of their times did not wonder at Gotama's orthodoxy, instead they saw in his beatific smile, a promise of peace

The goals were high, the path lay uphill, and therein remained the test of the seeker of *Nirvāṇa* If she crossed over, she won If not, she had to try in this life and lives to come, till she attained it No matter how high be the stage of her achievement, a woman had to be born as man before she achieved Buddhahood

What was the attitude of the doctrine toward women? Were nuns equal to monks? Could women attain the highest enlightenment? Could women be bodhisattvas? There is only one-word answer to all these queries "No" According to both *Anguttāra Nikāya* and *Majjhīma-Nikāya*,⁴⁸ it was impossible for women to achieve Buddhahood Alex Wayman says "Vasubandhu's *Abhidharmakośa* observes that both men and women can engage in the four degrees, but that when a woman masters the supreme mundane natures she loses her female sex attribute and is converted into a 'male' "⁴⁹ E J Thomas recounts five essentials for the realization of Buddhahood two of which are that the candidate must be (i) a human being and (ii) a male⁵⁰ Dayal emphasizes the need for 're birth' as a man, and maintains that a bodhisattva can be a woman in the first *Āsankhyeya* but not in the second or the third⁵¹ Thomas also quotes an example from the *Lotus* of a naga girl of eight years who presented a jewel to the Buddha Her sex changed and she became the Bodhisattva⁵² This doctrine of male bodhisattva did not exempt goddesses either In *Avalokiteśvara*, it is prophesied that

47 Altekar p 325

48 *Anguttara Nikaya* i *Majjhima* iii 65 66

49 Wayman *Queen Śrīmālā* p 35

50 E. J Thomas *History of Buddhist Thought* (London Kegan Paul, 1933) p. 64.

51 Dayal *The Bodhisattva Doctrine in Buddhist Sanskrit Literature* (London Kegan Paul, 1932) p 224

52 E. J Thomas *Buddhist Thought* p 183

Umā (Śiva's consort) will change her sex and be a Buddha
 Umeśvara⁵³

* * *

There may be several reasons for the Buddha's initial aversion to admitting women to the Order. Since celibacy, austerity and strict mental discipline were keynotes of Buddhist monastic life, he probably felt that varied cultural levels of women might not meet with the expected standards of the Order. Secondly, the nearness of opposite sex might demand a greater strength from both the Orders to maintain celibacy. May be it was an acid test for both. Was it worth it, he wondered. His doubts were not altogether baseless. Asceticism in all societies have warned men against women's snares, committing the common fallacy of penalizing women for the weaknesses of men.

Further, Gotama probably wondered as to how the male dominated society would react to the freedom allowed to women? The society that had for centuries considered women's total dependence as an irremediable fact of existence would probably be shaken up. There always was the "ever present question of what they were to do if the lady were to desert them"⁵⁴. Also Gotama had to encounter the conventional Brahminical religion and the new Jainism. The survival of Buddhism depended upon the faith and loyalty of the lay people. Indeed, the Buddha was caught up in a human situation.

But *women* came to Buddha's rescue. They discerned in the Buddha's teachings an opportunity for their deliverance. Buddhism had held that (a) *karma* and rebirth affected all mankind — men and women alike — and hence women did not have to depend on men for their salvation, (b) an unmarried woman or a widow had the same chance as anybody else. (c) Again, Buddhism gave equal opportunity to women of all ranks and castes — rich and poor, Brahman and Śudra — to elevate themselves. (d) Not only that, the fact that the Buddha delivered common sermons for both men and women implied that women had the same comprehension as men.

Thus the women interpreted the implications of the Buddha's teachings as a means of their emancipation, though of course, the Buddha had never visualized the outcome of his precepts in this light. In fact, he confirmed the social convention of women's subordination by inflicting extra disciplinary rules when they came to him seeking an opportunity for deliverance. They unquestioningly accepted the rules for they were seeking emancipation and not

⁵³ Ibid., p 183.

⁵⁴ Horner p 334.

equality Sex-war was unthought of; women were seeking evolutionary change, not revolutionary one

Nirvāṇa was their goal, determination their strength, Buddhism showed them the Way

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Works cited

- Altekar, A S, *The Position of Women in Hindu Civilization* Delhi Motilal Banarsidass 1962
- Buhler, George, trans, *The Laws of Manu* 1886 repub, New York Dover Pub, 1969
- Chaudhary, Rama Prasad, "Position of Women as in Early Buddhist Monasticism," in *Buddhist India*, 1, No 2 (1927) 187-194
- Coomarswamy, Ananda, *Buddha and the Gospel of Buddhism*, New York Putnam's 1916
- Dayal, *The Bodhisattva Doctrine in Buddhist Sanskrit Literature* London Kegan Paul, 1932.
- Dutt, Nalinaksha, 'Great Women in Buddhism,' in *Great Women of India*, ed, Madhavananda and Majumdar Almora Advaita Ashrama 1953
- Embree, Ainslie, T, ed *The Hindu Tradition*. 1966 rpt, New York Vintage, 1972.
- Foucher, A., *The Life of the Buddha*, ab & trans, Simone Boas Conn Wesleyan Uni. Press, 1963
- Frazer, R. W, *Indian Thought Past and Present* London T Fisher Unwin, 1915
- Horner, I B, *Women under Primitive Buddhism*, New York Dutton, 1930
- Humphreys, Christmas, *Buddhism*, London Cassell & Co, 1951
- Kurtisnghe, Buddhaghosa P, "The Buddha and the Basic Human Rights" in *AP* 40, No 1 (1969) 16-20 Listed in *Prāci Jyoti*, vol. 8, 1972.
- Meyer, Johann J, *Sexual Life in Ancient India* New York Barnes & Noble, 1953
- Mitra, Ved., *India of Dharma Sutra* New Delhi Arya Book Depot., 1965
- Mookerji, R. K., *Ancient Indian Education* London Macmillan, 1947
- Mookerji, R. K., 'Women in Ancient India' in *Women of India*, ed, Tara Ali Baig, Delhi Govt. of India Publication, 1958.
- Norman, K. R., trans., *The Elders' Verses II Therīgāthā*, London Luzac & C., 1971
- Oldenberg H., *Buddha His Life, His Doctrine, His Order*, trans. W Toey London Luzac & Co., 1928
- Rhys Davids C., 'Preface' in *Women under Primitive Buddhism*, Horner New York Dutton, 1930
- Thomas, E. J., *History of Buddhist Thought* London Kegan Paul, 1933.
- Thomas E. J., *The Life of Buddha*. London Kegan Paul, 1927
- Warren, Henry Clarke, *Buddhism in Translation* 1896, rpt. New York Atheneum, 1972.
- Wayman, Alex and Hideko trans., *The Lion's Roar of Queens Srimāla* New York Columbia Uni. Press, 1974
- Wayman, Alex, "Parents of Buddhist Monks," *Bhāratī*, x & xi (1966-68), 25-35.



SACRIFICE IN THE ĀRANYAKAS

By

INDU C DESHPANDE

Though the term Veda signifies various literary compilations, such as, the Samhitās, the Brāhmanas, the Āranyakas, the Upaniṣads and according to some scholars even the Sūtras, these compilations differ from one another both in form and contents. The Samhitās, namely, the Rv (= Ṛgveda), and the Av (= Atharvaveda) are the collection of the Mantras. The Rv reflects the religion of the classes in the community of the Vedic Āryans, while the Av reflects the religion of the masses. This religion of the Vedic Āryans was simple and uncomplicated. The hymns of the Rv are mainly of the nature of prayers addressed to various divinities. Their contents are largely mythological. As said earlier, the Av is the Veda of the masses, it comprehends the common life of the common man. The two later Samhitās, viz., the Sv (Sāmaveda) and the Yv (Yajurveda) are secondary productions. The Sv is a musical redaction of some of the Mantras from the Rv. These chants are intended to be used in a soma sacrifice. The Yv, which refers to various Rv Mantras, deals more or less directly with sacrifice.

A substantial change in the political, social, and economic life of the nomadic Vedic Āryans as they settled down in the region of Saptasindhu, influenced their religion also. Their ritual which was simple and straightforward in the earlier period, now became complex and complicated. Elaborate and rigid rules came to be prescribed in connection with the various details of the ritual, such as, the officiating priests, the sacrificial materials and implements, the divinities, the oblations, the mantras, the dakṣiṇā, and the expiation rites for the errors in the sacrificial procedure. Consequently there grew up a separate class of priests who were experts and could therefore help the people in sacrificial performances. Similarly, out of the need for the literary works which would discuss and describe this newly developed complex system of ritual, originated the various Brāhmana (Br) texts.

The Br are a different type of literary work. They normally presuppose the Vedic Mantras and give their explanations. They reflect the spirit of an age in which all intellectual activity was centred round the sacrifice.

A further development of the Br is represented by the Āran-yakas (= Ār) The Ār are the concluding portions of the Br They constitute a natural transition to the Upanisads (= Up), the oldest of which latter are partly included in and partly appended to them Broadly speaking, the Ār constitute a connecting link between the Br and the Up Though the Ār also explain, glorify, justify, and recommend the particular rites like the Br, their object seems to give the theosophical or sometimes philosophical speculations on the nature and meaning of the sacrifice¹

The Āitareya-Ār (ĀĀ), and the Śankhāyana-Ār (Śān-Ā) give the description of the Mahāvratā, a sacrificial rite observed on the last day but one in the Gavāmayana-Sattrā Mahāvratā, being one of the forms of the Agniṣṭoma, is divided into three pressings, i.e., the morning, the midday, and the evening pressing of the Soma Each pressing has an equal number of Stotras and Śāstras The morning pressing has the Bahispavamāna and four Ājya Stotras, and the Ājya and Prauga Śāstras of the Hotr and three Ājya Śāstras of the Hotrakas The midday pressing has the Mādhyandinapavamana and four Prṣṭha Stotras, and the Marutvatīya and Niṣkevalya Śāstras of the Hotr and three Niṣkevalya Śāstras of the Hotrakas The evening pressing has the Ārbhavapavamāna Śotra and the Agniṣṭoma, Sāman, together with the Vaiśvadeva and Agnimāruta Śāstras of the Hotr The most characteristic of the features of the Mahāvratā Sāman and the Mahaduktha is their division according to the form of a bird The Mahāvratā Sāman has five parts corresponding to the body, head, right wing, left wing, and tail In the Mahaduktha the parts correspond to the body, neck, head vertebrae, wings, tail, and stomach But there is a general correspondence with the Sāman, the first verses of each part appearing in the Sāman Besides these parts there are also three groups each of eighty ṭcas, one in Gāyatrī, one in Uṣuḥ and one in Bṛhatī metre, which form the food of the bird² According to the Ār the importance of sacrifice is purely in the ritual as regards the use of the hymns These collections of verse make up a very considerable body of hymns This new Samhitā was regarded as extremely sacred Thus a rite originally popular became, through theological speculation, one of the most secret doctrines of the Brāhmanas³ We are examining here some specimens of such theological character

There exist different views regarding the metre of the Prauga-śāstra of the morning pressing The ĀĀ⁴ recommends the Gāyatrī

1 This paper is based on the observations in the Āitareya-Ār, Śankhāyana-Ār Taittirīya-Ār

2 Keith ĀĀ, Intd. pp. 28 and ff

3 Keith ĀĀ, Intd. pp. 28 & ff

4 cf. ĀĀ I 1 3 tad u gāyatrām eva kuryād brahma vai gāyatrī brahma'tad ahar brahmaṇaḥ va tad brahma pratipadyate

metre for the same because, Gāyatrī is Brahman, Mahāvratā day⁵ is Brahman, so Brahman is accomplished through Brahman. For the Marutvatīya-śāstra of the midday pressing the hymn to be employed should be of Vasukra because, Vasukra is Brahman and this day also is Brahman.⁶ The recitation of the Śāstra should commence with the utterance of *him* because, *him* is Brahman, this day is Brahman and so he should commence Brahman with Brahman.⁷

Viśvāmitra reached Indra as a result of his devotion and recitation. Indra who was pleased at his recital granted him a boon through which Viśvāmitra desired to know Indra. Indra said in reply, "I am *prāna*, you are *prāna*, he that radiates heat and light is *prāna*. In this form I am all-pervading.⁸ The eminent god Indra of the vedic mythology, identifies himself with the cosmic principle *prāna*. Thus the Upaniṣadic tendency towards inwardisation is gradually becoming evident in the Ār. In further descriptions the words *ātman*, *brahman* are substituted for the word *Prāna* in the Ār.

The TĀ⁹ (= Taittiriya Aranyaka) describes the five great sacrifices (Pañcamahāyajñas). Those are Devayajña, Pitryajña, Bhūtajajña, Manusyayajña and Brahmajajña. When one makes an offering in the fire even it be mere fuel-stick, then it is as if he performs the Devayajña. When one offers *svadhā* to the fathers, even it be mere water, that becomes the Pitryajña. When a man offers a *baḷi* (= a ball of rice) to the beings it becomes the Bhūtajajña. When he gives food to the Brāhmins, that of him is the Manusyayajña. When one studies *svadhyāyā*, even it be a single *Rc* or *Yajus* or *Saman*, it becomes the Brahmajajña.

Brahmajajña is stated as an obligatory rite¹⁰. It is the name given to the act of repeating by heart one's own sacred text or even a single verse of it, whether a *Rc*, *Yajus* or *Saman*. One must not pay any heed to the obstructions, causing even by the natural phenomena, while performing the Brahmajajña. Such is the case that cloud in this sacrifice should be considered as being the *haviṛdhāna* cart, the lightning — the fire, the rain — the oblation material, the thunder-producing cloud — the *vaṣṭaṭkāra*, the rumbling sound — the *anuvaṣṭakāra*, the blowing wind — the sacrificer, and the newmoon night — the *svistakṛt* offering. Who thus performs

5 cf. Śan. Ā. I. 2. brahma itad ahar

6 AA. I. 2. 2.

7 cf. AA. I. 3. 1. brahma vai humkaro brahma itad ahar brahmanarva tad brahma pratipadyate

8 cf. AA. II. 2. 3. prāno va aham asmy iṣe prānaḥ tvam prajāḥ sarvaṃ bhūtaṃ prāno hy eṣa ya eṣa tapati sa etena rūpeṇa sarva diso viśvasmi
Śan. Ā. I. 6. etad va aham asmi yad etad avocam yad va kṛṣṇo bhūyo tapas tad eva tat syat yad aham

9 TĀ. II. 10.

10 II. 15. Svadhyāyo dhyetavyo

Brahmayajña, he performs penance, as *svādhyāya* (i.e. Brahma yajña), indeed, is penance¹¹ Moreover this sacrifice is very easy to perform. In this the sacrificial material is constituted of the deities themselves,¹² fasting is the consecration, the place of study is the Ūpasad, the seat is the Sutyā, the speech is the Juhu, the mind is the Upbhṛt, *dhrutī* is Dhruvā, breath is the Havis, Sāman is the Adhvaryu, and breath is the sacrificial gift This sacrifice commences and concludes on the same day The purificatory bath (*avabhṛtha*) in this sacrifice which begins in the morning, takes place in the evening Having touched the water, whatever is given is the sacrificial gift (*dakṣiṇā*)¹³ There can be no easier procedure of the sacrifice than that of the one suggested by the TĀ.

In the Ārunaketuka-agnicayana rite (TĀ I) the water is to be used instead of the bricks of clay Naturally prodigality of time, labour, wealth is barred and a more simple ritual is presented The mantras, formulas given for this rite are also of philosophical nature In it occurs the description of Kāla (= time) It is said in it that the existence of the orb of the sun is established by all through the memory (*smṛtiḥ*), perception (*pratyakṣam*), traditional instruction (*aitihya*), and inference (*anumāna*) The Sun accepts certain ray (*marīci*) which is above this world The full development of it is known by us as various divisions of time (i.e. *kāla*), such as, moments, hours, days, fortnights, months, etc These divisions constitute the year (*samvatsara*) A river which has its unending origin, is swollen by small streams, never dries similarly, the year which has the sun as its eternal origin, never comes to an end The sun originates the seasons Six rays of the sun correspond to the six seasons Every season progresses and at the same time motivates the other This description follows the constitution of the seasons, their names, their distinctive natures etc The TĀ (I 7) also gives the names of the seven suns and notes the conceptions of different teachers regarding them Some say that the breath (*prāṇaḥ*) with its seven actions should be regarded as seven suns, while the others hold the view that the objects causing to live, namely, *mahat*, *aḥankāra*, etc., are the seven suns Some are of the opinion that the five senses along with *manas* and *buddhi* are the seven suns when others think that the seven breaths being in the head should be considered as seven suns¹⁴ In the same chapter a query about four kinds of death, namely, Param, Avama Madhyama, and Catuḥ, as well as, about the abodes of the pious and of the sinners has been made In an answer to this query, it

11 TĀ II 14 *tapo hy svādhyayah*

12 *ibid* II 15 *samṛddhur daivatani*

13 *ibid* II 15 10-17

14 cf TĀ I 7 *prano jivani 'ndriyajivani sapta ārsanyah prāṇaḥ surya ity āchāryāḥ*

is said that Āditya, Pavamāna, Agni, and Candramā are the Param, Avama, Madhyama and Catuh kinds of death respectively¹⁵ The religious people with all satiety reach the world of pious men The remaining obtain the Madhyama (i.e. the wind), Catuh (= the moon) and the Aavama (= the fire) kinds of death While discussing the fate of the sinners, the TĀ (I 8 5) says that the suns aroused from Kasyapa¹⁶ ever kill the sinners in the mid region of *dyaus* and *pṛthivī* They, devoured by their deeds, entangle in the cycle of life and death, like the insects¹⁷ Further the TĀ (I 11) emphasises the necessity of the knowledge of sat and makes it clear that one who does not possess this knowledge entangles in the worldly affairs To the contrary, one who knows this world to be the tree with the roots above (i.e. *brahman*) and the branches below (i.e. the objects from Brahman to the stalk of grass on the earth), never believes death as his end¹⁸

The TĀ (III) gives the Caturhotṛ-mantras The Mantras, Dasahotṛ, Caturhotṛ pañcahotṛ, Śaḍḍhotṛ, and Saptahotṛ are collectively known as the Caturhotṛ Mantras The numbers catuh, pañca, ṣaṭ, sapta, and dasa in the names of these Mantras indicate the numbers of Hotṛs associated with the respective Mantras The Hotṛ mantras are employed either for mere recitation or to accompany the offering of oblations of clarified butter Each of these Mantras has a portion called *grāha* Whenever an oblation is to be offered with any of these Hotṛ-mantras, the offering is to be made with the *grāha* portion ending with *svāhā* after the Mantra proper has been recited The recitation of these Mantras and the offering of oblations with them have been frequently prescribed as a part of the performance of various sacrifices The subjects of the Mantras are of highly philosophical matter A part of it as a specimen has given below

In the Dasahotṛ Mantra¹⁹ *cittih* and *citta* (mind) is said nothing but the laddle and the clarified butter, respectively Speech is the altar, the recitation — the sacrificial grass (*barhis*), the intention to know and the true knowledge — the fire, Vakpati — the hotṛ, mind — the Upavakṛ, breath — the oblation material, and the samans — the Adhvaryu The Dasahotṛhṛdaya²⁰ which elucidates

15 cf TĀ I 8 amum ahuḥ param mṛtyum pavamanam tu madhyaman agnir eva vamo mṛtyuḥ candramas catur ucyaṭe

16 TĀ I 8 6 kasyapaḥ uditah suryah papan nirghnanti sarvada

17 TĀ I 8 6-7 mṛtva punar mṛtyum apadyante adyamānaḥ svakarmabhih śatukāḥ kṛmayāḥ iva

18 TĀ I 11 urdhvamūlam avak chakham vṛkṣam yo veda sampratī na sa jatu janaḥ srad dadhyat mṛtyur ma marayad iti

19 TĀ III 1

20 TĀ III 11

the significance of the Daśahotr, states — ātman, the self-shining principle makes the things to shine. At the primeval stage of the universe it was moving in water with the desire to create. Brahman first knew it in the form of Dasahotr. Ātman enters the beings and governs them. It is one unique principle but acts as being many. The hundred forms of lustre, all the Vedas, all the priests, and all the Hotr-mantras become one in it. It is the supreme soul of all.

It would be seen from the accounts, given so far, that in the Ār the Brāhmanic ideas are slowly taking an abstract non-ritualistic turn. The Ār seem to be no longer interested in the rules for performance of the sacrifices and the explanation of the rites connected with them. The AĀ repeatedly uses the sentence in connection with the Mahāvratā-bahū vā etasmin ahanī kim ca kim ca tārānam kṛiyate.²¹ Presumably this refers to the strange rites like the dance of the maids, union of a couple, conversation between a brahmachārī and pumsatī, etc. This, as KEITH²² says, is a curious inversion of ideas by which the old popular rites retained no doubt reluctantly in the ritual, become regarded as improper and needing atonement. The Ār mainly devote themselves to an exposition of the mysticism and symbolism of the sacrifice. It may be because of this we do not find an intelligible account as it stands, of the Mahāvratā in neither the AĀ nor the Sān-Ā. In case of the AĀ a sūtra like book (chap V) was added by Śaunaka, but in it also the secret nature of the doctrine is reiterated.²³

A special significance of the Ār to the vedic thought is that they have stressed the efficacy of the inner or mental sacrifice as distinguished from the outer or formal sacrifice, consisting of rice, barley, or milk etc. The Sān-Ā (X) narrates the performance of the internal Agnihotra. According to which deities are established in man himself, fire in speech, wind in breath, sun in the eye, moon in the mind, the quarters in the ear, the waters in the seed. He makes the offering in all of these by eating, drinking and by making others to eat and drink. Moreover the Sān Ā (X 8) states how the tenfold Agnihotra is performed by a man within himself by eating and drinking himself and making others to eat and drink. His ex-
piration is the Āhavanīya (fire), his inspiration — the Gārhapatya his Vyāna — the Anvāhārya-Pacana his mind — the smoke, his anger the flame, his faith — the coals, his speech — the Samit (brand), his truth the oblation, his intelligent self the essence

²¹ cf. AĀ I 13 1 2 2 etc

²² AĀ 167 f n 9

²³ AĀ 3 3

That virāj-like (vairājam), tenfold Agnihotra is offered It sends him to the world of heaven Now if one who does not know this Agnihotra, sacrifices, it is, as if, he pushed aside the coals and made oblation in the ashes²⁴

BOOKS REFERED

- 1 The Altareya Āranyaka—ed KEITH A B , 1909
- 2 The Taitirīya Āranyaka—Anandashram edition.
- 3 The Śāṅkhayāna Āranyaka—Anandashram edition.
- 4 The Śāṅkhayana Āranyaka—translation—KEITH A. B, 1908.
- 5 History and Culture of the Indian People Vol. I The Vedic Age, 1951.
- 6 History of Dharmasastra Vol. II. Part II—P V KANE, 1941
- 7 History of Indian Literature—M WINTERNITZ, Vol. I, 1927
- 8 History of Indian Philosophy, II—S K. BELVALKAR and R D RANADE, 1927
- 9 History of Sanskrit Literature—A A. MACDONELL, 1961.
- 10 Some Aspects of the History of Hinduism—R. N DANDEKAR
- 11 Vedavidya—R N DANDEKAR.
- 12 A Critical Study of the Āranyakas—Ph D thesis (typed)—INDU C. DESHPANDE.

²⁴ cf Śān A X.8 ya idam avidvan agnihotram juhōti yatha angaran spohya bhasmanī hutam tadṛk tat syat.

RELIGION V/S SCIENCE

By

J L SHARMA

Religion has been taken till now as something irrational emotional, an object of individual belief or superstition, and therefore unscientific. Being rational has become an essential requisite of a modern man. And he has to accept only as much as falls within the scope of his limited knowledge. Rest of it, howsoever real it may be, even an object of our direct empirical experience, is unscientific and therefore to be condemned, as it does not answer our 'hows and whys'. And it does not set within the frame work of our laws of nature yet known. Thus it appears as if some thing called 'scientific' is much more important than any other thing which may be otherwise absolutely correct. We have to just close our eyes at whatever is religious and in this respect we are guided not by logic but by our contemptuous instinct or pre-established whims. Scholars like M N Roy feel proud in saying "Religiosity is not an Indian monopoly. It is widespread in this country than in others, because in no other civilised country the masses are so very ignorant"¹

These materialists fail to understand the role of religion in the evolution of culture and civilisation. Religion has been running the whole gamut of human life. There has been no watertight compartmentalisation between religion and science in the beginning. No border-line can be traced between the two not only in India but perhaps in any ancient civilisation of the world. There is no such branch of knowledge which did not fall in the peremetre of religion, rather every branch of knowledge and learning itself was a part of religion. The reason is that 'early founders of science, not only in this country, but elsewhere also never claimed to be labelled as scientists'². Thus condemning their achievements in any field simply for they were not called scientists, would be nothing but a logical fallacy, most unscientific in its temper and attitude. 'The be reduced to physical and chemical terms. This is methodologically false.'³ It would mean neglecting all whatever history has record-

1 M N Roy Science & Superstition p. 55.

2 Satya Prakash Founders of Science in Ancient India (Preface)

3 Sir Alistair Hardy The Biology of God (London, 1977) p. 18

ed Rightly does write the eminent anthropologist R R Merret,⁴ "Rationalism can at most serve to temper a flame, which it does not light and easily extinguishes"

Thanks to some of the modern scientists, who, in their works, have shown a new spirit and a new approach by giving up anti religious and orthodox scientific traditions Einstein is recorded by Ben Gurion⁵ to have believed in something 'behind energy' despite his great formula ($E = MC^2$) Alstir Hardy, who has very recently established a research unit at Manchester College, Oxford, for the scientific study of religious experiences, believes something 'subtle' and not a sheer chance behind DNA mutation in its biochemical phenomenon⁶ The notion of randomness can not be accepted as final truth "Believers are no more likely to be shaken in their faith by the misgivings of the geneticists than they were confirmed in them by the patronizing approbation of the theoretical physicists, for faith rests upon quite other foundations — as secure to those who hold them as the derivation of a logical theorem"⁷ 'God never plays dice with the world', says Einstien,⁸ and he never left the answers to blind chance Nature is well regulated through its laws and this is what the Rṣis conceived in the Vedic concept of 'ṛta' "The marvel of the symphonic texture of the natural process' compells one to find the 'evidence of a Great Composer',⁹ however invisible or imperceptible it may be "Where my child", says the Rṣi, illustrating through the subtlest invisible particle of a seed of Banyan tree, "you perceive nothing there dwells invisibly a mighty Nyagrodha (Banyan)"¹⁰ DNA constituting the whole character of man is not a chance destined at random to any one but according to our eschatology one's saṃskāras already stored in ego-centric mind through birth and rebirth determine the place and nature of one's birth¹¹ This is how logically the heredity is explained by Lord Kṛṣṇa in Gītā "Yogis, who could not attain perfection in their previous birth, are again born in the families of Yogis and the wise wherefrom they further advance to meet their goal"¹²

4 Faith Hope & Charity in Primitive Religion p 15

5 Ronald W Clark Einstein The Life & Time (New York 1971) p 19

6 Sir Alstir Hardy The Biology of God p 33

7 P B & J S Medawar The Life Science (London 1977) p 169

8 Ronald W Clark Einstein The Life and Time p 18

9 P B & J S Medawar The Life Science p 168.

10 Tam hovaca yam vai somyātam-anūmanam na nibhalayasa etasya vai somyāsoṇmīnah mahān nyagrodha-stuṣṭhaṭi — Chandogya Upaniṣad (Adyar) 6 XII 2.

11 J L Sharma The Philosophy of Destiny Chintamani Nov 78 (Bombay) pp. 110 112

12 sūcīnām śrīmatam gehe yoga bhraṣṭo'bhijāyate
athava yogīnām-eva kule bhavati dhīmatam — Gita 6 41-42

known.¹⁸ The approaches may be different says Vivekananda, 'both microcosm and macrocosm' would eventually lead us to that perfect truth, which is in harmony with experiences of both these worlds¹⁹

The gradual development in the field of physical sciences, from basic elements to mass and energy, their identity through mutual transformation, and the Unified Field theory, all has shown that 'manifestation' and not 'creation' is the key-world of all this universe. It would not be thus irrelevant here to quote Lincoln Barnett where he has shown this point of culmination in the theories of physical sciences. "Through the centuries, the varied current of discovery, theory, research and reason have steadily converged, mingled and flowed onward into ever widening and deepening channels. The first long advance was the reduction of the world's multifarious substances into 92 natural elements. Then these elements were reduced to a few fundamental particles. Concurrently the various "forces" in the world came to be recognised one by one as varying manifestations of electromagnetic force, and all the different kinds of radiation in the universe — light, heat, X-rays, radio waves, gamma rays — as nothing more than electromagnetic waves of varying wave length and frequency. Ultimately the features of the universe distilled down to a few basic quantities — space, time, matter, energy and gravitation. But in Special Relativity, Einstein demonstrated the equivalence of matter and energy and in General Relativity he showed the indivisibility of the space-time continuum. The Unified Field Theory now culminates and climaxes this coalescing process. For from its august perspective the entire universe is revealed as one elemental field in which each star, each atom, each wandering comet and slow wheeling galaxy and flying electron is seen to be but a ripple or tumescence in the underlying space-time unity. And so a profound simplicity supplants the surface complexity of nature. The distinctions between gravitational force and electromagnetic force, matter and energy, electric charge and field, space and time, all fade in the light of their revealed relationships and resolve into configuration of the four-dimensional continuum which is the universe. Thus all man's perceptions of the world and all his abstract intuitions of reality merge finally into one, and the deep underlying unity of the universe is laid bare."²⁰ Thus it becomes clear that all this diversity is nothing but the manifestation of One, which is the Absolute of monism. That One is the only reality and that is the only Truth.

18 Chandogya Upanishad (Adyar) 6.1.3

19 Vivekananda The Science & Philosophy of Religion p. 8.

20 Lincoln Barnett The Universe & Dr. Einstein (Mentor Edition) pp. 120-22.

DEITIES IN MĪMĀMSĀ - VERBAL OR PHYSICAL?

By

K N CHATTERJEE

Traditional View*

Mīmāṃsā is concerned with delienating *dharma*. By *dharma* is meant sacrifice. Sacrifice, again comprises of three things—a material object (*dravya*), a deity (*devatā*) and the act of parting with the said material thing (*tyāga*) in favour of the said deity¹. The act of parting means the pouring of the said material thing upon the sacrificial fire in accompaniment of *mantras*. The *mantras* are the medium of recollection of either the said thing, parted with, or the said deity. The sacrifice is held to lead to *apūrva* by virtue of which the sacrificer attains the results of sacrifice—heaven or the like.

A question arises as to what occasions the chanting of the *mantras* — heaven or the like other fruit and the deity or the *apūrva*. In view of heaven or the like other fruit and the deity being indicated by the *mantras*, the chanting thereof is apparently considered to have been occasioned by the fruit and the deity².

Yet *apūrva* brings about the fruit and as such is liable to accomplishment to call for the manner-of performance (*itikartavyatā*) in the context of which, the chanting of the *mantras* is occasioned, the fruit or the deity being only accessories thereto³.

It may be contended that sacrifice means the partaking by the deity in reference, of what is parted with by the sacrificer and as such it is the deity in reference, that should assume prominence to occasion the act of sacrifice involving the chanting of *mantras*. The deity, thus, is akin to a guest in the context of the act of hospitality accorded to him⁴.

Moreover, a deity has mastery over everything. Without his favour, fruits are unlikely to be attained by men⁵. Indra, a deity lords over heaven, the earth, the waters, the mountains, all that grows and all that are with life, what is to be attained, what is

1 *dravyam devata tyagah. Ka Śr Su I 2 12*

2 *Phala devatayos ca. Jai Su IX 1 4*

3 *Na Codanato hi tadgunyam Jai Su. IX 1 5*

4 *devata va prayojayedatithuvad bhojanasya tadarthatvat ibid IX 1 6*

5 *arthapatyacca ibid IX 1 7*

attained and what is poured out in oblation⁶ Hence heaven or what is hankered after cannot be attained unless Indra, the lord of heaven is propitiated The primary object of the performance of sacrifice, therefore, is to propitiate a deity A deity, therefore, should be physical, otherwise propitiation thereof becomes redundant

Indeed that a deity is physical is explicit in a number of vedic mantras⁷ There are *mantras* and *brāhmana*-texts as well indicating physical deities, partaking of things offered in oblation, superintending over the universe, having lustful desire and having the sense of elevation at being propitiated⁸

The answer is that sacrifice is the instrument of heaven or a like other fruit, achieved by way of retribution *Yajeta*, the direct statement of the kind of a single word (*ekapada-rūpa śruti*) in *yajeta svargakāmah*, for an example, while presenting the principal and the accessory by the different constituents, thereof, lays it bare that the sacrifice is the means to heaven, the desired end But as the sacrifice does not live upto the moment, immediately preceding the attainment of the said desired end, *apūrva* is conceived of as the activity (*vyāpāra*) of the sacrifice to persist till the attainment of the desired end (viz the heaven) Thus it is *apūrva* that should occasion the performance of a sacrifice involving the chanting of mantras with the deity relegated to a secondary position⁹

The argument that sacrifice cannot be the means to heaven or a like other fruit in view of its being intervened by *apūrva* does not lend support to the view that a deity is the bestower of heaven or the like For a deity is intervened by sacrifice in addition to *apūrva* In fact, *apūrva* being a *vyāpāra* or a potency (*sakti*) of sacrifice, the causality in sacrifice in respect of heaven or the like, so well borne out by a direct statement of the kind of a single word (*ekapadarūpā śruti*) cannot be challenged For *vyāpāra* can never replace the substratum of itself A deity, on the otherhand, cannot be conceived of as bestowing heaven or the like, superseding a sacrifice For a deity is not thus known through a direct statement or otherwise Moreover, a deity, even if conceived of as bestowing a fruit in retribution, has to look upon sacrifice on the part of its performer It is simpler, therefore, to assume the causality of the

6 Indro diva indra īse prithvyam indro apamindro it parvatanam/Indro vṛdhate havye indrah/ / Rv X 10

7 X 47 1
made Indro vṛtrani jighnate RV

8 Addhundra prasthute ma havimsa Rv X 116 8
Indra diva indra īse and so on (quoted above)
Typtah evanamindrah prajaya paśubhistarpayati Vide sastradīpika on jal. S0 IX 1 6.

9 Api va śabda-pūrvatvad yajna-karma pradhanam syad gunatve devata-śruthi Jal. Su IX 1 9

fruit in sacrifice itself instead of lending the responsibility of bearing fruits to a deity. Further, the statements like *vanaspatibhyah svāhā*, and *mūlebhyaḥ sīhā* do not mention any deity. For *vanaspati* or *mūla* are only insentient. Hence having a physique, partaking of oblations, superintending over all things in the universe, being propitiated and bestowing a fruit — the characteristics of a deity¹⁰ are absent in such instances. The theory of *vigraha pañcalatva* thus gives way. The *mantras* and the like, claimed to bear upon such a theory are only metaphorical (*arthavāda*). The analogy of guests also is not of any avail. For guests are the pivot of hospitality while a deity is only a cog to sacrifice. An injunction like *yajeta svargakāmaḥ* gives prominence to sacrifice and a deity is only a part of the process.

A new perspective

Śabarasvāmīn, the commentator on the *sūtras* of jaimini, while commenting on the aphorism of jaimini-karturīā *Śruti-samyogad vidhiḥ kārtsnyena gamyate* (VI 1 5) observes that gods have no right to the performance of sacrifice and the reason that he adduces is that they have no deity¹¹. Such negation is called for only in case there was a possibility of gods performing a sacrifice and such a possibility again could be imagined only if gods were physical beings. Similarly, if a deity were only verbal, there is no reason why gods should have no deity. The author of the *Vārtika* has pointed out therefore, that to those who hold that a deity is only verbal, the text of Śabarasvāmīn carries no sense¹².

The observations of Śabarasvāmīn, therefore, suggests that the theory of deities being verbal is only to invoke a tradition (*prauḍhivāda*). In fact, the *bhaṣyakāra* merely eulogises *larma*.

Tradition ascribes to jaimini, the authorship of the work known as *sankarsa kāṇḍa* also known as *devatā laṇḍa* or *upāsana-kāṇḍa*. It is said to have been comprised of four chapters. The first chapter held that *mantras* unfold the nature of deities. The second chapter maintained that *vidhi*, *arthavāda* and *nāmādheya* are only expressive of the characteristics of deities. The third chapter spoke of the power of the deities of assuming physical forms of their choice at their will or to disappear whenever they so desire or to move simultaneously to a number of places and so on. The fourth chapter is supposed to have dealt with the idea that the performances of good deeds bring about divinity or salvation¹³.

10 *Vigraho haviṣam bhogah ausvaryaṇa prasannata /
phala pradānamityetat pañcakam vighrahadikam / /
vedānta darsana (devatā dhikarāna)*

11 *Na devaṇam devatantarabhavāt Ś Bh on Jal. Su VI 1 5*

12 *Yesām śabda eva devatā teṣāmapyayukto granthah Tantra-vartika on ibid.*

13 *Vide Prapañca-hṛdaya*

The *Maitrayanī-samhitā* of the *kṛṣṇayajurveda* school gives the *gāyatrī-mantras* of *Rudra-mahādeva*,¹⁴ *Gauri*,¹⁵ *Ganeśa*,¹⁶ *Kārtikeya*,¹⁷ *Brahmā*,¹⁸ *Viṣṇu*¹⁹ and *Sūrya*²⁰ On having prescribed the rite of fire-consecration, it gives a *mantra*²¹ too for the worship of *Śiva* in the said fire These *mantras* are indicative of physical deities

The *Aitareya-bhāhmana* too while providing for the meditation on a deity²² affirms that a deity is only physical

The *vedānta* school also holds that a deity is physical It argues that the *mantras* or the *brahmana*-texts, indicative of the physical nature of a deity cannot be dispensed with as mere *arthavādas* For the *arthavādas* are of identical authority with *vidhis* *Mīmāṃsā*, herself, it points out, recognises *bhūtarthavāda* as an authority in that it neither confirms nor contradicts any other means of valid knowledge The *mantras* or the like other texts that are indicative of the physical nature of a deity neither confirm that any other means of valid knowledge has laid bare nor do these run counter to what some other means of valid knowledge provides for²³

In *vanaspatibhayah svāha*, *mūlebhayah svāha* and the like, the supreme soul, resting in a tree or in its roots is understood and hence there is no incongruity²⁴

Karma or *apūrva* too does not become redundant in case a deity is physical and makes an award of fruits For in awarding fruits, a deity has to take into account the *karma*, done by individuals For otherwise, he would be charged with partiality and the like²⁵

Early vedic ritual was simple in form and in spirit The powers of nature were personified and worshipped as gods with milk, grain butter or the like Worshipping was also inspired by personal gain Objects of worldly desire like children and cattle were prayed for Victory in battles, riding over an enemy were also the objects of prayer

14 tatpuruṣaya vidmahe mahadevaya dhūmahī tanno Rudrah pracodayat Mai Sam. agniciti-parakaraṇa

15 tad gangaucynya vidmahe gīṣutaya dhūmahī tanno Gaurī pracodayat. ibid

16 tat karataya vidmahe hastimukhaya dhūmahī tanno Dantī pracodayat. ibid

17 tat kumaraya vidmahe kartikeyaya dhūmahī tanno Skandah pracodayat. ibid

18 tat-caturmukhyaya vidmahe padmasanaya dhūmahī tanno Brahma pracodayat. ibid

19 tatkesavaya vidmahe narayanaya dhūmahī tanno viṣṇuḥ pracodayat. ibid

20 tadbhaskaraya vidmahe prabhakaraya dhūmahī tanno Bhanuḥ pracodayat. ibid.

21 Devanāṇa ṛṣīṇaṃ ca suraṇāṃ ca pūrvajam / Mahadevam sahasrakṣam śivamahayamyam / / ibid

22 yasyai devatayairhaviṛghṛtāṃ syāt tām dhyayet baṣaṭ Karṣṇyan At Br II 1 8.

23 Br Sū. I 3 26-33

24 op. cit

25 Br Sū II 1 34

Gradually, this simple ritual consolidated into an organised cult. As a consequence, the character of gods changed, artificial deities were added to the family of gods. 'A clay pot or the sacrificial post became the object of fervid adoration as though these were veritable deities of well-nigh paramount power'²⁶

Symbolism came to play its role. A lotus-leaf symbolising water was provided for to be placed on the sacrificial altar, for an example, where fire was to be installed to suggest that *Agni* is the offspring of water.

The notion behind the performance of sacrifice also started changing. The sacrificer no longer prayed unto a god for personal gain. On the contrary, he thought of forcing the gods or deities to sanctioning what he was after. Sacrifice was also resorted to with a view to empowering gods to maintain World order. Thus sacrifice reigned supreme.

The extreme development of the cult of sacrifice could not yet dry up the earlier notion of gods. The later vedic literature, therefore, provides for sacrifice as what man owes to gods in the form of a debt.²⁷ The grace of god was yet to be sought for.

Speculative thinking rose its head. The idea of the plurality of gods was gradually replaced by the unitary notion of divinity as found in the concept of the *visve devas*. This unity of god head, however, did not imply, as yet the conception of one God. Monotheism was still a far cry. But it made itself felt. All gods were attributed with common virtues. 'Philosophical monotheism' was ushered in as a consequence in the form of a precursor to pure monotheism.

Gradually what were predicated against gods made of them independent deities. *Visvakarman* or *Prajapati*, in this way, assumed the character of the supreme divine being responsible for the creation and maintenance of the universe.

SUBHĀŚITAS IN THE MAHĀBHĀRATA*

By

N A DESHPANDE

The Mahābhārata (Mbh) is a mine of subhāśitas or epigramatic and pithy sayings. They cover a wide range of more than seven hundred topics. An analysis of the contents of these subhāśitas is attempted below, which, it is hoped, will give a fair idea of the fields they have covered and of the practical knowledge the Mbh contains. The subhāśitas that follow this analysis will amply bear testimony to the oft-repeated subhāśita viz 'व्यासोच्छिष्ट जगत्सर्वम्'.

Out of the eighteen Parvans, the twelfth viz the Śanti-parvan has the largest number of subhāśitas, and number sixteen viz the Mausala contains the smallest number. If we arrange the Parvans according to the number of subhāśitas each of them contains, and place one with the highest number first, then the order would be — 12, 5, 1, 3, 13, 6, 2, 7, 4, 11, 8, 9, 10, 15, 14, 17, 18 and 16.

Out of the topics dealt with in these subhāśitas, the topic that has the largest number of subhāśitas is "King". Other topics like Dharma, Brāhmana, Kshatriya etc come next. Some of the subhāśitas are repeated twice, or even thrice (see e.g. 5 141 33b, 6 2 14b, 6 21 11b, 6 61 16b, 6 62 34b, 6 117 33b, 11 17 6b).

Some subhāśitas like असम्भव हेममृगस्य जन्म supposed to be found in the Mbh are not there. So also a number of subhāśitas from the 'Kāṇikānīti' will not be found in the collection of subhāśitas given below (see p. 574 of vol. I, part II for critical remarks, and Vol. 14, chs. 138-140 of the Critical Edition). The rendering of the subhāśitas given in the analysis is free and many times only their gist is given. Now follows the analysis.

Kinds of men Human beings can be generally put into three categories. Best, mediocre and mean (5 33 56), but they can be classified under such heads as good, bad, wise, ignorant etc.

Good men For a man of good character there is nothing that is unobtainable (12 124 15). An Ārya or a good man does not dig up an old enmity that is buried, he is never proud, he does not get

* (Figures in brackets respectively stand for the Parvan, Adhyaya and verse from the Critical Edition of the Mahābhārata published by the Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute, Poona.)

perturbed in a calamity (5 33 93), he is not selfish : e he does not feel elated when happiness comes to him, or when others are in a difficulty, he does not repent after having given something to someone, and he never brags (5 33 94), for he knows that pride destroys everything (5 33 43) He avoids self-praise (7 166 34a) He does not condemn or praise himself or others, since he knows that this is not the way that the Āryas follow (8 25 8) He desires to bring back, striving morally, whatever is taken away from him (5 39 40) He tries to rise above the bonds of the constituents of Prakṛti to become immortal (12 207 29)

Such men as first practise Dharma and enjoy wealth obtained morally, lead a householder's life and perform sacrifices, get happiness in this world and in the next (3 181 37)

Bad men A bad man commits sins through ignorance and yet regards himself to be good, he hates the behaviour of the good so he is naturally condemned by people (12 153 2) such is the nature of bad people that they get irritated or excited all of a sudden and show favour without a cause (5 36 39) If a person keeps contact with such a man or talks with him or sits by his side or even sees him, he loses the merit of his religious rites (3 1 27) It is advised that a selfish, wicked ungrateful and shameless person should be kept away (5 38 36)

Wise men Intelligence, forbearance control of senses and giving away wealth in charity are the qualities possessed by wise men (12 82 26) They follow such practices as the performance of sacrifices charity, austerities and respect for the Vedas and for truth (3 199 57) They are advised to avoid harsh and unpleasant words, perfidy, molesting others's wife, adharma and falsehood (12 149 75) A wise man is interested in Dharma (3 200 44), he relies neither on enjoyment nor on the evanescent life (9 23 32) He is advised not to hanker after youth physical form, life collection of wealth prosperity, company of dear persons since all these are transitory (3 2 45), he should control his senses (12 187 27) While listening to others he takes only what is useful (1 69 10) People try to emulate the example of a wise man (12 136 151), who realises that there is nothing greater than knowledge (6 26 38a)

Ignorant men Sex and hunger are primary instincts of human beings An ignorant person goes after these two only, for the satisfaction of which various sins are committed (3 2 61) Ignorant persons are not happy even though they get much (3 32 32a) They harass the wise by making great fuss about a thing and thereby in-

cur a sin, but a wise man always forgives them (5 34 71) An ignorant man does not understand the drawbacks in his acts (3.200 6b).

Negligent men One that is negligent has no discrimination and happiness (12 275 16a)

Greedy men One coveting property or wealth meets with great misery, if one gets it, the misery increases, and when one, interested in amassing wealth, is deprived of it, one becomes more miserable (1 145 24)

Ungrateful men An ungrateful man is never successful in life, nor has he any status in life, he is untrustworthy, for him there is no expiation (5 10 10, 12 167 19)

Feeble men A feeble man, especially a king, should not move all alone (1 179 106)

Hungry men A hungry man knows no shame (12 139 50a)

Detached men Non attachment is the root of Śreyas (12 287 3a,) one that is not attached to the worldly objects reaches the Highest Soul (6 25 19b)

Poor and rich men A number of subhāṣitas commend poverty Poverty leads to happiness and great satisfaction in the world (12 170 8 3 203 46) It is even better than a kingdom (12 170 10), for the wealthy person being as it were in the jaws of death, is always depressed (12 170 11), while the poor man sleeps happily (12 170 7b)

But certain subhāṣitas express exactly the opposite view Poverty is nothing but a synonym for death (5 132 13b) It is a sin (12 8 14b) A poor person being always in debts does not live happily (5 105 6) His desires are a source of vexation to himself (5 33 52) It is better for a poor man to die than to get wealth by doing harm to his kinsmen (5 14 13b 6 92 6a) For one who enjoys the money of his friend and is unable to return it, it is better to die (5 105 7) A man who borrows money with a promise to return it and does not keep his promise loses all his religious merit (5 105 8) A poor man gets neither this nor the next world (12 8 22), he is unable to perform his religious duties (12 8 23) The rich become richer and the poor always remain poor (12 8 21) A great difference between the physical health of the rich and the poor is brought out by a subhāṣita which says that the rich have no strength for enjoyment, while the poor digest even wood (5 34 49 12 28 29) Another point of difference is that a stranger becomes the friend of a wealthy man while a poor man's kinsmen desert him

(12 309 86), friends throng around a rich man (5 133 35) He alone gets a friend, he alone is respected by his kinsmen, he alone is manly and he alone is looked upon as a wise man (12 8 19)

Artha or wealth, worldly objects Though material prosperity or Artha occupies a very important position in human life, Mbh clearly says that the order of the goals of human life that one should follow is Dharma, Artha and Kāma (12 161 26)

Acquisition and preservation of wealth A man should collect wealth as a bee collects honey from flowers without hurting them (5 34 17) Nothing can be gained if an effort is not made to get it (10 1 33) Man longs for material prosperity, but it is hard to have it (3 245 27) Sometimes human effort becomes useless to obtain wealth (5 34 20), one desiring material prosperity should follow Dharma from the beginning Artha cannot be had without Dharma as nectar cannot be had except from the heaven (5 37 44) Experts in political economy value the acquisition of a thing sure to be obtained more than that of a thing of doubtful acquisition (10 1 47)

Proper use of wealth is either enjoying it or giving it in charity (2 5 101, 5 39 51, 12 309 91) A family prospers because of wealth Though Artha, as a goal of human life succeeds Dharma, yet Dharma proceeds from it (12 8 23a) Wealth thus being very useful in the performance of religious duties should be preserved carefully (12 21 12) Not only both this and the next world can be attained by means of Artha (12 128 43), but anything else also can be attained with it (12 128 49a) Wealth utilised for making offerings to deities and dead ancestors is not unending (12 134 5), again, it does not give so much happiness as Dharma does (12 263 55b) A person acquiring wealth by fraudulent means goes away from Dharma (12 130 17b, 12 281 19a, 12 161 23, 24) Only way to secure spiritual welfare from wealth is to sacrifice it (3 34 63a), one who secures wealth only for its own sake does not know what it is, such a man is like a forest keeper (3 34 24) A man who continuously longs for material prosperity only and does not practise Dharma and Kāma, merits death (3 34 25)

It should be borne in mind that acquisition of wealth is uncertain (4 19 3a), for such is the nature of things that a thing conceived one way may turn otherwise (2 72 10, 4 4 27, 5 78 6a) A prosperous person should be firm minded, for, like swans deserting a dry lake, material objects turn away from him who is fickle-minded who lacks restraint, or who is dragged away by his senses (5 36 38), but a rich man who has foresight and is firm minded seldom loses his wealth (5 39 41)

A wealthy man should not forget that he is fleeced by all (2 5 101, 3 2 39, 5 39 51)

A very important universal truth is told in a subhāṣita viz it is money that makes man go or man is the slave of money, and not vice versa (6 41 36)

Certain subhāṣitas tell how responsible persons like kings should look at material prosperity or Artha. All kinds of movements become possible with the increase of material prosperity (12 8 16). All undertakings of an unintelligent person having no Artha are of no use like rivers in summer (2 8 18). There is no friend and no foe, it is Artha that makes friends or foes (12 136 104). No friendship is stable and no enmity is eternal. It is material prosperity that brings about friendship or enmity (12 136 14). The entire world pursues Artha, it is Artha that produces liking or disliking for a person (12 136 145b). Joy, anger, learning and restraint also follow from Artha (12 8 21).

It should be desired for the acquisition of Dharma, and Dharma is the protection and preservation of the body (12 123 6). Without Artha, neither Dharma nor Kama can proceed (12 161 13). Not only Dharma and Kāma, but even heaven cannot be attained without Artha. Without it, people cannot even survive (12 18 17). Artha in company of Dharma and Dharma connected with Artha are like honey and nectar mixed together (12 161 23). People get fed up with a person who has neither Dharma nor Artha (12 161 24).

Two subhāṣitas tell in a nutshell what one's view towards material prosperity should be. They are: Avoid attachment to Artha (12 266 9) and Artha acquired morally is real, that which is not so should be condemned (12 281 19a).

Dharma As said above Dharma occupies the first place in the four goals of human life, it is here treated after Artha because as noted above, Artha helps to secure Dharma and majority of people are more inclined to Artha than to Dharma, since tendency to material gain is more natural and instinctive than to spiritual prosperity or abstract virtues.

Dharma is very subtle (2 34 3a, 13 10 2ab, 13 10 64b). Eternal Dharma is based on truth, and it is very difficult to conceive it (3 197 39, 5 35 49), and is known only by the experts (2 60 31b), who describe it to be very noble (3 34 51a, 3 200 3b). It is the greatest thing in the world, and if properly practised it gives peace (2 60 13cd). It is so called because it preserves and keeps the society in tact (8 49 50).

The term 'Dharma' is variously explained. It is the preservation of the body (12 123 6). Kindness is great Dharma (3 67 15b). Kindness and straightness are Dharma (13 23 19). Forgiveness and highest peace of mind constitute Dharma (5 33 48). It is the way of living without perfidy or with the least perfidy (12 254 6). It consists in not being attached to anything (12 328 14b) and in being harmless (14 43 19b). Whatever is connected with harmlessness is Dharma (12 110 10). Doing one's duty is Dharma (3 199 15). A just undertaking is Dharma (3 198 72a). Not taking what is not given, self study, austerities, harmlessness, truth, absence of wrath, forgiveness and sacrifice constitute Dharma (12 37 7).

Not thinking of some one else's wife, protecting a lady kept under one's protection, not taking what is not given, avoiding honey and liquors is five fold Dharma (13 128 26). Harmlessness, truth, absence of hunger, charity — these four constitute Dharma (13 147 22). Customs, Smṛtis and Vedas tell what Dharma is (12 130 15, 12 251 3, 13 129 5). Dharma has scriptures as its authority (3 198 78). What is practised by the good is Dharma and not that which is practised by the wicked (12 139 70).

The world depends upon Dharma and it is possible to practise it by even the affluent (3 34 47). The other goals of human life and even the kingdom depend upon Dharma (3 5 4).

Artha and Kama, bereft of Dharma, should never be practised (5 122 35), since Dharma always stands at the top of the other goals (12 161 18). So in this evanescent world one should practise Dharma right from one's birth (11 4 14a).

Dharma is to be practised by one all alone (12 186 27), and one should not make a show of one's practising Dharma (13 148 35). One who tries to take undue advantage of Dharma does not get the merit due to it. Same is the case with a person who is uncertain about Dharma (3 32 5,6), for such a person there is no expiation (3 32 17a).

One who follows Dharma with determination obtains immortality hereafter (3 32 19). It is the raft to reach heaven (3 32 22). It is the best course (12 143 8a). Dharma does not make one or one's friends weak (3 34 21). It is not good to swerve from one's Dharma (3 34 54b), for real Dharma does not come in the way of one's duty (3 131 10). In fact it proceeds from one's conduct (3 150 28a).

Truth and purity protect Dharma (5 34 37). It is difficult to know the course of Dharma (12 30 1a), may be, one in a thousand

knows what it is (3 205 15) Dharma distinguishes between sin and virtue (3 296 1)

There is no greater gain than Dharma (13 109 62b) The prosperity of all beings depends upon the spread of Dharma (12 91 14) It is better to die while practising Dharma than to get victory by foul means (12 96 16b), since there is no greater gain than a victory got through proper means (12 97 10) Dharma always brings in its rewards It is through Dharma that sages have crossed the mundane existence or that gods reside in heaven (12 161 7)

Under no pressure should Dharma be renounced (5 40 11) Only under very exceptional circumstances Adharma becomes Dharma (12 128 15b)

One who practises Dharma, Artha and Kāma as the occasion demands and makes a proper fusion of the three is happy in this world and in the next (5 37 46)

Victory follows Dharma (5 141 33b, 6 2 14b, 6 21 11b, 6 61 16b, 6 62 34b, 6 117 33b, 11 17 6b)

Dharma is eternal, while happiness and unhappiness are temporary (18 5 50), and it alone goes with the departed soul (14 32 7b)

In brief, Dharma is Do not do unto others what you do not like to be done unto you (5 39 57)

Kāma The next goal of human life is Kāma or desire It is defined as the love or interest produced in the minds of those who are attached to the objects of senses (3 34 37)

Kāma is in a way important in the life of a human being since one who is without it, has no desire either for Dharma or for Artha (12 161 28), but it is not as important as Dharma because it takes away one's sense of decorum (5 35 43) It is impossible to indulge in Kāma and at the same time to avoid a woman (5 39 66) A sensual person perishes after the objects of his senses have perished (5 42 10a) There is no bondage like Kāma (12 243 7), because when the desires become strong, one leads to another (13 94 30) A person acting at will by ignoring Śāstric injunctions does not succeed, does not become happy and does not attain salvation (6 38 23) Therefore the best way to become prosperous is to renounce Kāma (3 297 57)

Family A family can be well protected by means of good conduct (5 34 37) In one and the same family different types of persons are born (5 3 3) One should renounce a member of one's family for the good of the family, one's family for one's own village,

one's own village for one's nation, and the entire world for one's own self (1 107 32)

Child Childless persons do not reach any of the good worlds (1 90 67), nothing purifies them (1 111 24), all kinds of vows and fasts observed by an issueless person are of no avail (2 38 27) People do not like to visit the house of a childless person (1 111 11) For the parents a child is a kind of stability in the world (1 111 23b), in the family and in the race (1 69 17), and it brings in the reward that Dharma would give (1 111 31a) Austerities, sacrifices or all other sanctifying objects do not equal a child (1 41 28, 2 38 26)

But there is at least one subhāṣita which says that sonless persons are lucky since they may not be required to suffer the bereavement of the son (3 138 17) But this solitary subhāṣita does not reflect the view of the Mbh society, which values a child very much and a son, the most

Son Those who desire their welfare long for sons (12 146 13a) The son is none else but the father reborn (1 68 62b, 1 68 74a), he is the soul of the father (3 297 51a) For human beings (—who have tactile perception) there is nothing greater than a son (1 68 56)

A son is called 'puttra' since he saves his parents from falling into the hell called 'pums' (1 68 39) Greatest acquisition in the world is to have a son (13 67 33b), a son saves his father from incurring demerit, hence he is called a 'son' (14 93 37)

Sons are as it were, rafts of religion saving the parents (from getting drowned in the ocean of the mundane existence) (1 69 19) Sons give religious merit and fame to their parents and delight their minds (1 69 19)

Everyone desires to have a son (7 166 5) and nobody likes to have a short lived son (6 108 40a)

Duties of a son He should show the greatest respect for his parents (3 297 41a) Obedience to his father destroys all the sin of a son (12 258 18b), and is the greatest Dharma (12 258 10) He can truly be called a son with whom the parents are pleased (12 137 92) Pleasing one's father is like pleasing Prajapati and pleasing one's mother is like propitiating the Earth (13 7 25) Obedience to one's father is a great religious duty and protection of one's mother is one's natural duty (12 258 10, 15 8 8b) A son should worship his parents sincerely (12 127 9) A son, even though younger, who is virtuous and always obedient to his parents deserves all good things (1 80 22)

The parents should never desert their son (1 150.5b), but a bad son, who is not famous as a donor, as one who has practised austerities, or as a brave man, or as a learned man or as a rich man, and who, therefore, is merely the excrement of his mother (5 131 21) should be deserted (12 137 89).

Daughter A daughter did not enjoy the same status as a son. She was looked upon as a great calamity (1 147 11a cf Rāmāyana 7 9 10 and 11, Gujrati Printing Press Edition) No one would like to give away his daughter like a beast (1 213 4). A daughter brings either fame or ignominy to the three families her mother's family, her father's family and her husband's family (5 95 16, a similar idea occurs in the verse from Rāmāyana, quoted above) An uncultured daughter would never reach any one of the good worlds (9 5 1 11) A pregnant maiden is a sinner (13 36 17b) Only good point about a daughter is "The eldest sister is to be looked upon as mother by the younger brothers and sisters" (13 108 19)

Wife She is called 'jayā' because the son, the very self of the husband is born of her (3 13 62a) She gives enjoyment and sons to her husband (6 5 101, 13 20 61b), she is the friend of the house-holder (3 297 45) When the wife is protected, the children are protected (3 13 61), a man having a wife is trusted by others, so a wife is a great 'gati' (1 68 43) In spite of such an important status given to a wife, polygamy is not condemned (14 97 14a)

Parents One who has given birth to a child, one who saves his life, and one who nourishes him are his parents (1 66 13)

Mother Women in general did not enjoy the same status as men A mother is looked upon as a 'pouch' (in which the child is borne during pregnancy) (1 90 31a), yet she is said to have authority over her son (1 99 38), she is even greater than the earth (3 297 41a, 12 109 16b, 13 108 14), she is the Southern Fire (12 109 7), she is the 'arant' and a solace to all that are afflicted (12 258 246) She protects her son, strong or weak (12 258 27), there is no shelter like the mother, no other recourse than her, no protection like her, she is the greatest fountain (2 259 29) There is no teacher like the mother (3 61 89 12 329 113 13 109 62)

The above analysis of the subhāṣitas pertaining to 'wife' and mother shows that a 'woman' did not enjoy a high status, but a 'mother' did

Father A father places himself (i.e. deposits his semen) into (the body of) his wife to have a son with a view to the preservation of the family and character (12 258 13) A father is heaven, he is Dharma, he is a great penance, when he is pleased, all deities are

pleased (12 258 20) Though afflicted with love for his son, a father does not give up his affection for his son (12 258 40a)

The Four Castes Brahmana In the hierarchy of castes Brahmana was at the top (8 23 32a) He is said to be the greatest among men (4 2 12) and among all the castes (1 76 19, 5 80 176) .

The important duties of a Brāhmana are harmlessness, truthfulness, forgiveness and preservation of the Vedic lore (1 11 14), and character, kindness, restraint, disgust (3 177 16), friendship with all beings, charity and self study (12 14 15, 12 55.14, 12 282 21) are his qualities The twelve great vows of a Brāhmana are Dharma, truth restraint, austerities, endurance, sacrifice charity, courage learning and absence of malice and jealousy (5 4 3 12) A Brāhmana is free from anger and delusion of mind speaks the truth pleases his preceptors, does not harm any one though harmed, has self restraint and is engaged in Vedic studies (3 197 31, 32 33 36), as the Vedas are his relatives (5 34 36) Self study and observance of vows are the great wealth of Brāhmanas (5 186 11) What is the use of material wealth for him? (13 105 12d) Restraint is a great virtue of a Brahmana (10 3 19 20) He is like a father to the other castes and is their preceptor (1-24 4) There is none greater than a Brahmana among the learned persons (13 122 86) It is not easy to obtain the rank of a Brāhmana (13 29 16b), to obtain a kingdom is easier than obtaining the rank of a Brāhmana (13 54 29a) A Brahmana is great by Mantra (5 165 15) He has incomparable vision (3 27 16), maturity and power of speech are to be found in a Brāhmana (2 19 426) He is a friend of all (1 209 5a, 12 60 12b) His heart is soft like butter (5 186 29a) though his tongue is sharp like a razor (1 3 323) A Brahmana resembles fire, so he should never be killed (1 24 36, 1 179 13a) Gifts of thousands of villages and cows should be given to him One who gives such gifts is absolved of all sins (3 34 76) No one should disobey him (3 205 21), or act against his will for he is like the flames of fire (7 126 36), an angry Brāhmana may destroy the nation (5 40.25), *dharmāḥ ca eva* (3 197 22b) or destroy even the worlds (3 189 18b) A man serving a Brahmana gets fame (13 57 19)

A Brāhmana who does not perform the duties of a Brāhmana and is engaged in the duties of a Kṣatriya should be killed (7 135 33) However, under exceptional circumstances he may wield a weapon protection of himself, of an inaccessible place or when commixture of castes is imminent (12 79 33)

Kṣatriya The duty of a Kṣatriya is the protection of all beings (12 120 3a 12 129 73a, 1 11 15) and administration of jus

tice (12.24.30b; 1.11.15). His duty is very fearful and always needs a weapon (12.22.5). His duty is to fight (1.127.11a; 8.39.32). He should always accept a challenge to fight (12.55.17). Casting his body in a war greatly befits a kṣatriya (5.156.7b; 12.22.3). and not dying at home (6.17.11) or resorting to a forest (3.49.13), because it is the duty or Dharma of a kṣatriya to die on the battle-field (7.50-67). A powerless kṣatriya, though endowed with all other qualities, is of no use (2.15.10), for such a kṣatriya is the meanest of all (10.3.70). A kṣatriya cannot be devoid of anger (3.28.34). He does not have feelings like love or soft-heartedness, nor does he care for friendship (12.13.13a). Victory is his embellishment (13.59.3), and he should help Brāhmaṇas (1.150.21) and other castes (1.150.22-23).

A vaiśya is expected to be diligent and should please all other castes (10.3.19, 20).

A Sūdra must be maintained by other castes (12.60.31b) and one senior in age should be respected (5.165.15).

King:—A kṣatriya alone is entitled to kingship, which is the greatest Dharma (12.128.47a). His eternal duty is to please his subjects, practise truth and be straightforward in his dealings (12.57.11). He is everything for his subjects (12.68.59). He is the protector of all castes (3.198.30a) and of Dharma (12.91.5). A king who properly looks after Dharma becomes the lord of the earth (12.91.5, 12.92.63b). Dharma depends upon him (2.91.5ab). Even if one, learned in the Vedas, challenges a king, he should punish him according to law (12.56.29). If he fails in his duty he cannot get success or reach heaven (12.69.31). If he is irreligious his subjects are doomed (12.92.12b). His great duty is to curb the wicked and protect Dharma and the good and not to flee from the battlefield (12.14.16, 12.57.15b). He should be cautious of enemies who have been defeated but have come together (9.57.13). He should do that which leads to the happiness of himself and all other beings, that is the main cause of Dharma and Artha (5.37.36).

A king should be truthful (2.19.40b). His behaviour is different from that of other people, so he should always think of self-aggrandisement (2.50.14). In contrast to what has been expressed in this subhāṣita, a subhāṣita says that a king should not have the sense of mineness for his grandeur or wealth; for it is a rule relating to kings that what one has acquired is taken away by another (2.50.19).

These seven the king should always try to protect ministers, treasury, sceptre, friends, nation, city and himself (12.69.62, 63).

He should not kill a woman, a child, an ascetic or a timid fellow, so also one who is not fighting (12 133 13) He should not fleece the subjects by extracting heavy taxes from them (12 88 19) He receives one fourth of the religious merit of his subjects if they are properly ruled (5 130 11)

A King should not destroy other's wealth, should give in time whatever is to be given, he should be brave, speak the truth and be forgiving, such a king does not go away from the right path (12 57 12) He should undertake commended things only (5 38 20, 21) He should feed those who are not fed, should take care of those who are fed (12 57 19), should always protect the good (12 79 43) His behaviour should be ideal (12 26 36) He who can control his passions properly rules the earth (5 127 32, 5 33 85) and is trusted by his subjects (12 57 29), the one opposite of this becomes unhappy (12 137 107)

State of anarchy is very bad (2 49 62, 12 67 3, 12 67 7b) Similarly if a king is mild his subjects are unhappy (2 50 21) and one who is soft or harsh as occasion demands is successful in his undertakings (12 56 21, 12 138 66) A king who is ill behaved, proud, obstinate jealous and does not protect his subjects incurs sin and is called "uncontrolled" (12 25 8) He incurs sin if he is unable to protect his subjects (12 25 19) Such a king is useless (12 79 40 42) Countries ruled over by a woman or a gambler or a boy sink like stone-boats in a river (5 38 40)

A King who has control over himself can alone put under control his ministers and his enemies (5 34 54) Kings have unsteady minds, so they speak sweet words, but strike hard (2 57 12cd) A king who, with a stable mind sees his own faults and considers opportune time and proper place becomes very prosperous (12 12 4) A king of a rash nature perishes immediately (12 93 15b), but one that practises Dharma rises to godhead (5 130 12) He controls time and not vice versa (5 130 15)

It is the deeds of a king that turn friends into foes and foes into friends (12 136 13) A weak king being alert and cautious, can defeat a strong king (2 14 8) Similarly if weak kings come together they can defeat a mighty king, as bees are able to kill a honey collector (3 34 68) Before undertaking anything he should consider time and place (12 136 14) He should bear in mind that it is exertion that is important and not the consequence, so without caring for victory or defeat, he should strive (12 25 21)

His Treasure —A king's treasure is his forte for an army can be maintained only if he has a large treasure (12 128 35) To

build up a large treasure he should follow the middle path (12 131 3)

Espionage—He should get information from all quarters through his spies (3 149 40), for he sees through his spies (5 34 32) Bad espionage ruins everything (12 69 13b) That king whose designs are not known to anyone and whose spying system is efficient prospers (5 38 15, 5 38 18ab), so also one whose plans are not known by his enemies (12 57 39, 12 138 24), or even by the members of his assembly (5 38 19)

War, victory, defeat—A king should fight for victory (12 96 11b) As victory leads to great fame (8 46 14b), it also leads to enmity (5 70 59a) Clear or pleasing directions smokeless fire going up various fragrances conches and drums making loud sounds, the bright sun and the moon indicate future victory (6 4 16 17) It is better for a king to die in a just fight than get victory through sinful deeds (12 96 16b) since there is no better gain than a victory obtained in a just battle (12 97 10b) He has to bear in mind that victory or defeat is not a constant factor i.e. one is neither always victorious nor does one always get defeated (12 107 17a) Even a defeat in a just battle leads a king to heaven (8 42 14b) A king desirous of victory does not get victory by means of his strength and prowess but only through truth and compassion (6 21 10)

A king desiring to save his life should fight with his adversaries when they cannot be conciliated by sweet words or gifts (5 80 13) Like a crane he should think about the affairs should be brave like a lion greedy like a wolf and should fly at an object like a hare (12 138 25)

Danda (Sceptre) Administration—The Danda (a symbol of the judicial authority or punishment) is the strength of the king (5 34 72) If it is properly wielded the four castes are well-controlled (5 130 13) and behave well (12 15 11 12 31) If there were no Danda the mighty would have harassed the weak (15 15 30) When a king properly administers justice it may be said that the great Krta yuga has dawned (5 130 14) Danda rules all the subjects it awakens the sleeping ones it is looked upon as Dharma by the wise (12 15 2) It protects the three goals of human life viz Dharma Artha and Kama (12 15 3) It is not to be abused (12 133 20a) It has got to be used and not abandoned for if it is not used there would be chaos (3 149 32b) Subjects protected through the proper administration of justice help the king prosper (12 121 34 12 137 10b) It preserves the grains and wealth (12 15 4) People do not behave wantonly through fear of Danda

(12 15 5) Everything is settled in Danda (12 15 6) It is so called because it restrains or curbs people from doing wrong things (12 15 8)

Subjects—Should always be afraid of the king, since he is their lord, he kills a person doing wrong (3 198 6) They must behave in such a way as to please the king (3 238 46) A king is not to be disrespected because he is a human being, he is a great deity in human form (12 68 40) One going against him does not get happiness (12 68 49a) When the king rules justly, the subjects do not transgress the bounds of morality (3 149 49)

Gambling—It leads to rift, which in its turn, routs the kingdom (2 46 12) It leads to strife — no wise man would like it (2 50 10a) It is the root of struggle and leads to mutual segregation or battle (2 56 1) It brings about enmity and great fear (2 59 5c) No one except a wicked gambler would give up his kingdom and go in for gambling as for renunciation (4 17 11)

Ministers—A king's strength depends upon his ministers (5 37 48 etc) A king should seek advice from experts (3 149 43) He should not confide in a minister who is not attached to him (12 84 28a)

King's family priests—He should have a family priest if he wishes his kingdom to prosper (1 164 13) His priests should be well versed in the Vedas, the six Angas, should be pure and truth-speaking religions and self restrained (1 159 17) A king having such priests becomes victorious (1 159 18) He should follow the advice of his priest (1 159 20)

Acts, Exertion, Destiny—Every act is binding (12 23 37), or we are ruled by Karma (13 1 65b) The rule 'Reap as you sow' is universal (12 270 20ab, 12 279 21, 13 6 10, 14 18 1a) Every act has its consequence (11 2 23) Whatever one gets in the world is due to one's own acts (11 3 7, 13 6 10), nothing that is done by a person perishes (3 225 170), its consequence can never be avoided (11 18 12b) A sinful, contemptible act or an act involving harm should not be done (1 85 5ab, 12 280 6, 12 280 18b, 12 283 23b) Good Karma leads to good results (12, 158 38a) Man's past Karma does not leave him (3 142 1b, 3 199 16) His past deeds are responsible for his present condition, so he should not worry (11 3 14a, 12 168 37, 12 174 16), for the fruit of a Karma done here is enjoyed in the next world (3 245 19a, 3 247 35) It is the doer of an act that gets its good or bad fruit (12 149 37, 3 200 5), so one should think before one undertakes anything (5 34 19)

One has to remember that one cannot escape doing Karma, because it is one's very nature (6.25 5, 11 2 22) So the best course in life is to perform one's duty — whether fruitful or otherwise (3 32 3), one should not hanker after its fruit (6 24 47); but should do the karma assigned to one, since action is superior to non action (6 25 8) One's own duty — even if it is deficient — is better than some one else's, even if the latter can be performed in a better fashion (6 40 47b, 48)

Though such a great emphasis is laid on one's performing one's duty and though it is said that exertion is 'Pauruṣa', and is supremely important (12 56 15), and is the 'actual fruit of action' (3 33 16), yet the role of fate or destiny is not totally ruled out

It is said that no one can set aside fate or destiny (5 40 30, 9 64 29b), destiny is powerful and man's exertion is useless (1 192 12a, 2 43 32a, 34a, 2 45 57b, 6 58 1a) Fate is stronger than exertion (3 176 27), success depends upon fate (7 120 28b, 29b, 7 133 64b) Happiness or unhappiness is due to fate (1 84 7), no body can control his fate (13 6 47)

With these subhāṣitas we also find those which give importance to both exertion and fate There is no other factor responsible for the success of an undertaking than exertion and fate (10 2 2) Fate must be accompanied by exertion (13 6 7)

Food — The importance of food is brought out by telling that life depends upon food (3 246 25, 12 18 27), everything depends upon food (3 131 16), and there is no gift like food (13 62 6)

Body, senses and mind — As a man casts off his clothes whether old or new, similarly bodies are cast off (by the soul) (11 3 6, 6 26 20)

Human body is transitory (3 200 23b) but not the soul (3 200 23) In human body the following five faults are noticed The four instincts viz sex, anger, fear and sleep and the life principle (12 290 54) Health is the greatest acquisition (3 297 53b)

One being led by the senses loses wealth life and wife (5 34 60)

Man's mind is very fickle (5 73 19a) and speedier than the wind (3 297 41b)

The Lord — The Lord is said to remain in the heart of all (6 40 61) Man is the tool in His hands (14 3 2)

Important personages — Kṛṣṇa Arjuna, Janaka have been referred to as important men. About Kṛṣṇa it is said that victory

comes wherever he is present (1 197 25b, 6 21 12b, 6 41 55a), Keśava cannot be seized with force (5 128 39) Keśava like Rāma (cf. *Ramāyana*, 2 19 30), does not speak twice (5 160 23a) Govinda is the most holy among the holy (3 86 23) King Janaka (12 17 18) and Dhananjaya are referred to with respect (1 77 16, 2 158 28)

Beasts—Bull is used for an analogy (12 78 40) Cow is very much respected (12 35 31), one may burn a forest to protect cows (12 35 31b) A wolf may kill an unprotected lion (6 16 18a), a tiger and a forest depend upon each other (5 29 48)

Human virtues and weaknesses—Mildness, contentment, character, straightness, penance, restraint truth and charity are all of equal value (14 93 93)

Truthfulness—There is no greater Dharma than truth or nothing superior to it (1 69 24a), so one should overcome falsehood with truth (5 39 58)

Good character—There is nothing in the world that people of good character cannot obtain (12 124 15)

Courage—Always pluck up courage (5 39 44)

Self emancipation—One should deliver oneself and not allow oneself to sink (6 28 5)

Non-attachment—Leads to Śreyas (12 287 3a)

Kindness—Is a great virtue (3 203 41, 3 297 55a, 3 297 71a, 12 220 109b, 12 316 12a, 13 59 6a)

Forgiveness—Is great strength (3 203 41)

Renunciation—Best tyaga is that of affection and of the objects of senses (12 156 17), it is a great penance (12 155 9b, 14 47 3), one who renounces the fruit of karma is real 'tyagi' (6 40 11)

Straightness—Gives one the same religious merit as baths at holy places (5 35 2)

Weaknesses—Enmity causes perturbation (2 51 10), jealousy straightway leads to death (5 40 4a), harsh words destroy wealth (5 40 4a), serving an anārya spoils one's character (5 35 43), immodesty destroys wealth (5 34 12b), hypocrisy leads to sin (1 68 26), false hope is nothing but death (5 35 43) Everyone wants pleasure (12 137 58b)

A few Don'ts—One should not have illicit connection with other's wife (13 107 20a) One should never renounce one's

Dharma (8 5 50) One should not serve these six mean persons one whose deeds are not easily intelligible, one who talks too much, a habitual liar, one who lacks devotion, one drawn asunder and one who is very much self-conceited (5 36 20, 5 37 33) One should avoid killing theft, others wife, telling a lie, harshness, wickedness and falsehood (13 13 13 14) One should not try to find the origin of sages, rivers, families of the great, ladies and of a wicked act (5 35 62) One should not speak words that cut the vitals of others (5 34 77) One should not depend upon others for executing one's own job (2 51 7) A man should not depend upon but should renounce these six like a boat shattered in the ocean, a teacher not teaching a Brāhmaṇa not studying a king who does not protect, a wife who does not talk sweetly, a cowherd remaining in a town and a barber remaining in a forest (12 57 45)

Thus the subhāṣitas in the Mbh cover a vast range of topics like the goals of human life, kingship, duties of castes etc, leaving almost nothing that concerns a human being. Most of them are didactic in nature telling how a human being should behave in the world, and in this respect they differ from the subhāṣitas occurring in the Rāmāyana where of course, the number of the subhāṣitas is smaller, and their range narrower as that epic is much smaller in size than the Mbh. Verses like Mbh 5 39 44 and Rāmāyana 5 12 10 are verbally the same, such subhāṣitas must have been popular and so the authors of the epics might have incorporated them.

(The Sanskrit subhāṣitas that follow are arranged in an alphabetical order of the topics)

अकापुष्पव्रतम्—	अपनीत सुनीतन योऽयं प्रत्यानिनीक । महिमास्वाय सुदुर्गा तद्वैरापुरपत्रम् ॥	5 39 40
अक्विचन —	अक्विचन सुख शत समुत्तिष्ठति चैव हि ।	12 170-7b
अकीर्ति —	अकीर्ति कीर्त्यते यस्य लोके भूतस्य कस्याचित् । पतत्येवाधमाल्तावान्धावच्छब्द स क्वीत्यत ॥	3 191 22
अवृतात्मा—	ययैध स्वसमुत्थन बह्विना नाशमृच्छति । तथावृतात्मा लोभन सहजन विनश्यति ॥	3 ? 37
अक्रोधन —	अक्रोधन क्रोधनेभ्यो विशिष्ट ।	1 82 6a
अगस्त्य —	अगस्त्येन विना को हि शक्तोऽयोधवशीषणे ।	3 101 10
अचिन्त्यम्—	प्रवृत्तिम् पर यत्तु तदचिन्त्यस्य लक्षणम् ।	6-6-11b
अज्ञानम्—	लोमप्रभवमज्ञान बृद्ध भूय प्रवधते ।	12 153 10a
अतिश्रम —	दैवेनोपहृते राजा कमकाने महाद्युते । प्रमादयति तत्त्वम न तत्राहुरतिश्रमम् ॥	12 25-14
अतिथि —	गृहस्थस्य हि धर्मोऽग्न्य संप्राप्तातिथिपूजनम् ।	13-2 68b
अतिमान —	अतिमान श्रिय हन्ति पुण्यस्याल्पनेधस ।	13-136-17a

अतिवाद -	अतिवाद त्रियो वध ।	5-40-4a
अतीतम्-	मृत वा यदि वा नष्ट योजीतमनशोवति । दु खेन तमते दु ख द्वावनयो प्रपद्यते ॥	12 317-9
अदक्ष -	भूति श्रीर्हीर्घृति सिद्धिर्नादक्षे निवसन्त्युत ।	12-27 30b
अद्रोह -	अद्रोह सर्वभूतेषु सतोप शीलमार्जवम् । तपो दमश्च सत्यं च दानं चेति समं मतम् ॥	14 93 93
अधना -	त्रय एवाधना राजन्भार्या दासस्तथा सुत । त्रय विलेमे अधना भवन्ति दास शिष्यश्चास्त्रतन्त्रा च नारी । अधनस्य मृत श्रेयो न हि ज्ञातिक्षये जय । अधनस्य मृत श्रेयो न च ज्ञातिवधाद्धनम् । अधनरूपेह जीवितार्यो न विद्यते ।	1 77-2a 2 63 1ab 5 142 13b 6-92 6a 12-173 6b
अधर्म -	यश्चाधर्मेण विब्रूयाद्यश्चाधर्मेण मृच्छति । तपोरन्तरं प्रैति विद्वेष चाधिगच्छति ॥ नाधर्मेण जितं कश्चिद व्ययते वै पराजयति । अनाचारस्तत्त्वधर्मेति एतच्छिष्टानुशासनम् । स्वकर्म त्यजतो ब्रह्मधर्मं इह दृश्यते । आशायारत्तनयोऽधर्मः । अनुक्रोशादधर्मं च जयेद्धममुपेक्षया ।	1 3 24 2 69 7b 3 198 72b 3 199 15a 2 263 12a 2 266-9a
अधिभूतम्-	अधिभूत क्षरो भाव ।	6-30 1a
अध्यात्मम्-	स्वभावोऽध्यात्ममुच्यते ।	6-30 3a
अनय -	उच्यमानं च यः श्रेयो गृहीते नो हिताहिते । आपदं समनुप्राप्य स शोचत्यनये स्थितः ॥	11-17 5
अनयं -	अनार्यवृत्तमश्राज्यसूयकमवार्तिकम् । अनर्या क्षिप्रमाप्नोति वाग्दुष्टं काघनं तया ॥ मृतं वा यदि वा ।	5 38 32 12 317-19 (see above)
अनशनम्-	तपो नानशनोत्तरम् ।	13 109 62b
अनसूय -	अनसूय इति श्रुत्वा शोभनान्याचरन्सदा । अदृच्छात्सुखमाप्नोति सर्वत्र च विराजते ॥	5 35 55
अनार्य -	जरा रूपं हरति । शीलमनामसत्वा ॥	5 35-13
अनित्य -	अनित्यं यौवनं रूपं जीवितं द्रव्यसचय । ऐश्वर्यं प्रियतवासी गृह्येदेयुः न पण्डितः ॥	3 2 15 5 39 11a
अनिर्वेद -	अनिर्वेद त्रियो मूलम् । अनिर्वेदं सदा वार्यो निर्वेदादिभुतं मुद्रम् ।	12 149 47a
अनुश्रम -	मानेन रक्ष्यते धान्यमश्वत्थद्वयत्यनुश्रमः ।	5-31 38a
अनुश्रोता -	अनुश्रोतो हि साधूनां सुमहद्वर्गवर्णनम् । अनुश्रवश्च साधूनां सदा प्रीतिं प्रयच्छति ॥	13 4-23 12, 196 11
अनुपाय -	न हि ह्यनुपायेन कश्चिदर्थोऽभिगच्छति ।	(To be continued)

The History & Culture of the Indian People

(In Eleven volumes)

Planned, Organised and Directed by Dr K. M. Munshi, President, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan.

General Editor: R. C. Majumdar, M.A., Ph.D., F.A.S., F.B.B.R.A.S., Director, History of Freedom Movement in India, Government of India, Ex. Vice-Chancellor and Professor of History, Dacca University, Hon. Head of the Department of History, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan.

Assistant Editors: A. D. Pusalkar, M.A., LL.B., Ph.D., and A. K. Majumdar, M.A., D.Phil.

This is the first history of India written exclusively by her own people which brings to bear on the problems a detached and critical appreciation. A team of over sixty scholars of repute present herein a comprehensive and up-to-date account of the political, socio-economic and cultural history of the Indian people.

VOLUMES PUBLISHED

Volume I—'The Vedic Age' (From the earliest times to 600 B.C.) Price Rs. 80.

Volume II—'The Age of Imperial Unity' (From 600 B.C. to 320 A.D.) Price Rs. 80.

Volume III—'The Classical Age' (320-750 A.D.) Price Rs. 80.

Volume IV—'The Age of Imperial Kanauj' (750-1000 A.D.) Price Rs. 80.

Volume V—'The Struggle for Empire' (1000-1300 A.D.) Price Rs. 80.

Volume VI—'The Delhi Sultanate' (1300-1526 A.D.) Price Rs. 80.

Volume VII—'The Mughul Empire' (1526-1707 A.D.) Price Rs. 90.

Volume VIII—'The Maratha Supremacy' (1708-1818 A.D.) Price Rs. 90.

Volume IX—'British Paramountcy and Indian Renaissance (Part I) (1818-1905 A.D.) Price Rs. 80.

Volume X—'British Paramountcy and Indian Renaissance (Part II) (1918-1905 A.D.) Price Rs. 80.

Volume XI—'Struggle for Freedom' (1905-1947) Price Rs. 80.

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED

WITH PLATES, MAPS AND PLANS

BHARATIYA VIDYA BHAVAN

Kulapati K. M. Munshi Marg, BOMBAY-400 007

1	* विष्णुसंहिता by Buddhaghosācārya, ed. Dharmānanda Kosambi ..	16 00
2	* भारतवर्ष-साहित्यसिखा ed Muni Jinavijaya ..	1 00
3	* भारतवर्षीय महाभारतशास्त्रटीका on the Mahābhārata by Devabodha, ed Dr. S. K. De ..	4 00
4	* भगवद्गीता भारतीय दर्शनार्थ Mm Anantakrishna Shastri ..	4 00
5	* धर्मशास्त्रटीका by Rudradāsa, ed. Dr. A. N. Upadhye ..	10 00
6	* गुजराती स्वयंस्वरप्रणमि Gujarati translation of Dr. Turner's 'Gujarati Phonology' by Prof. K. K. Shastri ..	2 00
7	* वेदवाङ्मयविश्लेष by Siddhasenadivākara, ed. Pandit Shukhlalji ..	20 00
8	* रत्नमालाटीका by Allārāja, ed Dr. R. N. Dandekar ..	3 00
9	* गणकव्यो by Bhartṛhari with a new commentary, ed. D. D. Kosambi ..	6 00
10	* Puranic Words of Wisdom, ed. Dr. A. P. Karmakar ..	2 00
11	* अथर्ववेदटीका by Miss Pratibha Trivedi ..	2 00
12	* वेदनाम्पतर by Bhattoji Dikshita, ed. Pandit R. K. Patanakar, Introduction by Prof P. K. Gode ..	1 00
13	* अथर्ववेदटीका by Kshirasamudravāsīmītra, ed. Acharya T. A. V. Dikshitar ..	1 00
14	* श्रीमद्गीताटीका by Smt. Shakuntala Rao Shastri ..	5 00
15	* भारतवर्षीय दर्शनशास्त्र by Prof K. K. Shastri ..	4 00
16	* Sacrifice in Rigveda by Prof K. R. Potdar ..	15 00
17	* वाङ्मय by Dr. Harivallabh C. Bhayani ..	8 50
18	* अथर्ववेद by Shamala Bhat, ed. Dr. H. C. Bhayani ..	6 00
19	* सिंहासनावली (Stories 18-22) by Shamala Bhat, ed Dr. H. C. Bhayani ..	8 00
20	* अथर्ववेद by Shamala Bhat, ed. A. S. Patel ..	8 00
21	* अथर्ववेद by Prithvichandra (from his अथर्ववेदटीका) Part I, critically ed J. H. Dave ..	12 00
22	* अथर्ववेद टीका by K. M. Munshi ..	3 00
23	* Rgveda Mandala VII--ed and translated into English with Critical Notes and Introduction by Prof H. D. Velankar ..	20 00
24	* अथर्ववेद टीका by Shamala Bhat, ed. Smt. Indira Merchant and Dr. Ramesh Jani ..	10 00
25	* Deposed King Thibaw of Burma in India 1885 1916 by W. S. Desai ..	7 00
26	* Syadvādamuktavali or Jainaviseṣatarka and Bhāvasaptatikā by Śrī Yaśasvatsāgara, ed by Prof S. A. Upadhyaya ..	3 00
27	* Vedānta Tatvāloka by Janārdana ed by Acharya T. A. V. Dikshitar, Introduction in English by Prof S. A. Upadhyaya and Preface in Sanskrit by Acharya S. Subrahmanya Sastri ..	8 00
28	* The Brahma Sūtras and their Principal Commentaries, Vol. I, by Dr. B. N. K. Sharma ..	35 00
29	* Manu smṛiti with nine commentaries by Medhatithi, Sarvaśānanārāyaṇa, Kullūka, Raghavananda, Nandana, Rāmacandra, Manirama, Govindarāja and Bhāruci, Vol. I (Adhyayas 1-2), ed by J. H. Dave ..	40 00
30	* Rksūktāṣaṭi with Important Padapātha, English Translation, Critical Notes, Select Glossary etc by Professor H. D. Velankar; with an Introduction by Professor S. A. Upadhyaya ..	27 00
31	* Bibliography of Theses in the Subject of Gujarati Language and Literature (upto 1970), compiled by Dr. N. I. Pandya ..	1 50
32	* The Brahma Sūtras and their Principal Commentaries, Vol. II, by Dr. B. N. K. Sharma ..	45 00
33	* Manu Smṛiti, Vol. II with nine commentaries (Adhyayas 3-4) Ed by J. H. Dave ..	60 00
34	* The Mahābhārata—A Study of the Critical Edition (with special reference to the Suparnakhyāna of the Adiparvan) by Prof. Mahesh M. Mehta ..	12 00
35	* Cultural Sources from the Veda by Dr. Sadashiv Ambadas Dange ..	15 00
36	* The Brahma-Sutras and their Principal Commentaries, Vol. III by Dr. B. N. K. Sharma ..	120 00
37	* Manu-Smṛiti, Vol. III with nine Commentaries (Adhyayas 5-6) Ed by J. H. Dave ..	50 00

* Asterisked titles are out of print

BHĀRATĪYA VIDYĀ

A quarterly research organ of the Bhavan
on all subjects connected with Indian Culture

VOLUME XXXIX : No. 4

1979

NOT RECORDED
AT ALL

Editors:

PROF. JAYANTKRISHNA H. DAVE, M.A., LL.B.

PROF. S. A. UPADHYAYA, M.A.



BHARATIYA VIDYA BHAVAN

BOMBAY-400 007

Issued in January 1980

EDITORIAL COMMITTEE

Prof. J. H. Dave



Prof. S. A. Upadhyaya

Dr. A. K. Majumdar

CONTENTS

	Page
Practical use of Mīmāṃsā Rules in the field of Dharma-Śāstra —Dr. P. S. Sane, Retired Professor of Sanskrit, Khalsa College, Bombay.	1
Problem of identification of Śāntā, the wife of Ṛṣyaśṛṅga —Dr. Madhusudan M. Pathak, Oriental Institute, Baroda.	9
Maxwell's Demon in Upaniṣads—Dr. Ramakrishna Rao Vetury, Professor of Applied Physics, Andhra University, Waltair.	15
Annam Param Brahma—Dr. P. M. Upadhye, Head, Depart- ment of Sanskrit, Parle College, Bombay.	21
Education in Ancient Gujarat—Prof. K. B. Vyas, M.A., D.Litt, Bombay.	25

PRACTICAL USE OF MĪMĀMSĀ RULES IN THE FIELD OF DHARMA-ŚĀSTRA

By

P S SANE

The Mīmāṃsā is a Science of interpretation. Primarily it consists of the principles of interpretation as applied to the ritual portion of the Vedas. It helps us in interpreting the obscure passages in the Vedas. Further, we find, these Mīmāṃsā rules applied in the field of Dharma-Śāstra for interpreting the various rules laid down in the Smṛti-texts. The importance of Mīmāṃsā in interpreting various rules laid down in Dharma-Śāstra texts can hardly be exaggerated. Commentators on Smṛtis and writers of digests on Hindu Dharma-Śāstra like vyāṇeśvara, Medhātithi, Mitra Miśra, Nīlakaṇṭha and others have substantially relied on the Mīmāṃsā for removing apparent contradictions and solving several knotty points in the Dharma-Śāstra-texts.

With the use of these canons of interpretation from Mīmāṃsā, mists of doubts and cobwebs of prejudices are cleared and the light of true meaning shines forth resplendant. It is for these reasons that Yājñavalkya has stated Mīmāṃsā as one of the fourteen sources of knowledge.¹ A Mīmāṃsāka was regarded as an indispensable member of a Paṇḍit by Manu (Manu III—3).

Vyāṇeśvara the learned author of the well known commentary *Mitākṣarā* on the Yājñavalkya Smṛti was a great scholar of Mīmāṃsā. This is clear from the numerous references to the Mīmāṃsā rules found in his commentary. His work would be hardly intelligible to a reader who is not initiated in the Mīmāṃsā.

It is interesting to note that in the *Mitākṣarā* on the *Prāyaścittādhyaḥya* of the Yāj Smṛti, we find as many as sixty five references to the Mīmāṃsā-rules, while there are only eighteen such references in the *Vyavahārādhyaḥya*. The reason for this is not far to seek. It appears to my mind, that the decisions in the law courts were to be given by the experts viz learned judges, assisted by a Paṇḍit, which included a Mīmāṃsāka, while *Prāyaścitta* was in many cases a self imposed affair. Hence, it was probably thought that no doubt

1 पुराणव्याख्यानसंग्रहसंज्ञासूत्रमिदम् ।
इति स्मृत्यानि विधाना धर्मस्य च चतुर्विधः ॥ भाष्य ३

should be left as to the true meaning of the text, so that even a layman could expiate his sin by resorting to the appropriate *Prāyaścitta*

In the present article I propose to tackle two passages involving *Mīmāṃsā* discussion, from the *Mitākṣarā* of *Vijñāneśvara* on the *Prāyaścittādhyāya*, with a view to showing the great influence exercised by the *Mīmāṃsā* on the minds of those, who had to interpret the sacred, as well as, the secular law contained in the *Smṛti* texts

The first passage deals with what is known as "Anupādeya pañcakam", while the second one deals with 'Prasanga' which is also a technical term from the *Mīmāṃsā*

In the beginning I have given, reference to the passage in the Text² where the *Adhyāya*, the verse, the number of the page, and the lines from *Mitākṣarā* selected for explanation are shown. Then comes the rule on which the discussion is based

The rule is not stated in so many words by *Vijñāneśvara* himself. It is implied in his discussion and is formulated by me

Next comes the literal translation of the passage. For proper understanding of the translation, original words are given in brackets wherever it was felt necessary to do so. Under Explanation, first comes the necessary context of the passage. It is followed by the views of the opponent and the *Siddhāntin*. *Mīmāṃsā* references are explained fully with quotations, where necessary. Further, the application of the rule in the context is given with an eye to clarity

TOPIC 1

Rule लिङ्गादीनामनुपादेयत्वम् ।

(Reference *Prāyaścitta*, v 6, *Mitākṣara* p 298, lines 9 & 10
From अत्र च 'सुराप्य इत्यादिषु to इत्यनुपादेयगतत्वात् ।)

Translation Here, the gender in *Surāpyah* (those who drink 1 quor) etc, is not intended to be significant. For, according to the statement, 'The experts in *Mīmāṃsa* declare that the gender, number, the place, the particular time and the fruit arising from a deed the set of these five is not intended to be stated (or is not significant)', it (gender) is included among (the five) things which are not significant.

Explanation *Vijñāneśvara* says that, in the verse under discussion, the gender of the word *Surāpyah* is not to be treated as signi-

² The fourth edition of the *Yajñavalkya Smṛti* with *Mitākṣara* published in 1936 by the *Nirṇaya Sagar Press* is used while preparing this article

ficant If we do so, it would mean that the death-impurity has got to be observed in the case of a man, even if he is a drunkard Non-observance of death-impurity is stated only in the case of 'Women' who drink wine But this is not the intention. The gender here, is not significant, as the word ought to have some gender, the feminine gender is used Following the rule of Mīmāṃsakas that *Linga*, *Vacana* etc the set of five things, is not to be treated as significant, i.e. construed strictly

In the modern jurisprudence also there are many occasions where a liberal as opposed to a literal construction of the wording of a section is considered justified by the context and the object of the statute, in other words 'the *Sententia legis* is preferred to the *littera legis*'.

The object of his verse of Yājñavalkya (Prā-6) is clearly to debar the drunkards and the persons who commit suicide from the sacred privileges, admissible to the dead, and the discrimination between a male and a female of the species who are guilty of this lapse can hardly be acceptable to the social conscience and hence in order to give effect to the conscience of the society, that Viṣṇūśvara has relied on this Mīmāṃsā rule

It may be further pointed out that in modern laws also, the pronoun 'He' is taken to include 'She', or sometimes it is so expressly provided as in section 8 of the Indian Penal Code 1860 Not only the gender but the 'number' is also held to be used comprehensively so that singular may include plural and vice versa (sec 9 I P C)

So what is meant is this Whosoever is addicted to wine, or whosoever commits suicide, is irrespective of his gender not entitled to be observed death impurity for, or to be offered libations of water to The point is (though it is not expressly mentioned by the author of *Mitākṣarā*) that the *Linga* etc are *Anupādeya* (i.e. non-significant), when they are used with reference to the *Uddesya* On the other hand when they are mentioned with reference to a *Vidheya*, they must be considered as significant In the present case, the non observance of impurity etc is the *Vidheya* and the *Surapyaḥ* etc are the *Uddesya*s Therefore their *Linga* etc is insignificant

Anupādeyapañcakam as quoted in the *Mitākṣara* is slightly different from the *Anupādeyas* that are mentioned in the *Mīmāṃsā* works In them the following are mentioned as *Anupādeyas* देशबालनिमित्त
पत्नस्यारा अननुष्ठेयत्वात् अनुपादेया । Jaiminiya Nyayamālā page (103)

3 पाञ्चदश्यायिका स्तोत्रा मनुष्य नामगान्धिका ।
मुद्राव्य आरम त्यागोन्नी नामावाचनमाजना ॥ याज्ञ स्म प्राय म्नी 6

Anupādeyatvam means Kṛtiavyāpyatvam. Thus, an Anupādeya thing is that, which cannot be made an object of an action or which cannot be created. Such things, therefore, cannot be enjoined by themselves, but they can be enjoined with reference to a thing, that can be an object of an action of देशादीनामविधेयत्वेऽपि विहितवर्मणा सह तेषां सम्बन्धो विधीयताम् । *Jaiminiya Nyāyamālā*, page 103

To these five, mentioned above, sometimes Samkhyā like the Ekātva of Yajamāna and Jāti like Brāhmaṇya etc are also added

The author has mentioned Surāpyah and Atmatyāgīnyah alone, since in the case of the remaining five, the gender is not a source of doubt

The Nīrṇaya Sāgara edition contains a foot-note as follows 'इदं पद्यं 'व' 'ग' पुस्तकयोर्नास्ति । There, इदं पद्यम्' refers to the quotation viz., लिङ्गं च वचनं देशं etc" Some editions do not contain this quotation. They have the text as follows सुराप्य इत्यादिषु लिङ्गमविवक्षितम् —अनुपादेयगतत्वात् ।

TOPIC 2

Rule यत्र (एकस्मिन्नेव वर्तते) गुरुलघुप्रायश्चित्तसंघातं तत्र गुरुप्रायश्चित्तात् —पातितं लघुप्रायश्चित्तस्य प्रसङ्गात्कार्यसिद्धिः ।

Reference Prāyascitta, v 243, Mitaksarā, p 388, lines 1 to 9
From यत्र पुनर्नस्मिन्निवद्ब्रह्मवधे To प्रायश्चित्तस्य कार्यसिद्धिः ।)

Translation Where again there is a concurrence of heavy and light penances, when one, who has been guilty as an instigator in a certain Brahmana slaughter, acts as a perpetrator in another, as the lighter penance, relating to his having acted as an instigator, falls within (the period of) the heavier penance, lasting for twelve years and the like, it comes to be performed incidentally (Prasangāt)

(1) And because this is so, it should not be supposed that, there being no difference (between the two processes), by following a lighter course, the achievement of greater also can be (possible). For, in the case (stated above), because of its falling within the other, at the performance (of the heavier penance), not knowing the peculiar nature (of the lighter penance incidentally performed) owing to its performance being incidental it is understood that the fulfilment of the purpose is achieved

(2) As a greater course of observance cannot fall within a lesser one, how can there be any doubt of incidental performance (of a greater course while the less one is being performed)?

Nor should it be asked, how by the performance, intended for the destruction of the sin, resulting from the murder of Caitra, can there be an absolution of the sin, arising out of the murder of Viṣṇu-Mitra. Because, here, the reference to Caitra etc., is unimportant (Atantratvāt)

Therefore, just as, by the performance of 'Āgneya' and the like, either in response to an injunction, promising the reward desired for, or for securing heaven, here is the execution of a compulsory injunction, similarly achievement of the effect (i.e. performance) of a small penance also is (there)

Explanation In Pr Verse (243), Yajñavalkya lays down a twelve years' penance, for one, who has killed a Brāhmaṇa. Viṣṇu-śāstra says that the instigator of such a murder, should observe the penance, for six years

Here, in the present passage, he discusses the case of a person, who has in him the combination of the sin of an instigator in killing one Brāhmaṇa, and the sin of actually killing another Brāhmaṇa. For the former, a sinner has to undertake the observance of the vow for six years, and for the latter, he must perform twelve years' penance. But as both the sins combine in one person here, the light penance, falling within the heavier one, becomes incidentally performed, in the course of the performance of the heavier one and therefore, it (i.e. the lighter penance) need not be separately performed

Objector's view

Just as the lighter one is incidentally performed during the course of the performance of the heavier one, why not following the same principle of submerging of one act within another, say that, while the lighter one is being performed the heavier one also becomes performed?

Answer to the objection

In the case of the lighter penance, its performance falls within the course of the performance of the heavier one. Because of its being performed incidentally, its specially being performed does not become known. Thus, accomplishment of its performance takes place automatically

Again the doubt that, the performance of a heavier penance can be accomplished by submerging it within the course of a lighter penance, cannot arise at all. Because the course of a bigger penance can never fall within the course of a smaller penance. Incidental

performance is possible, only in the case of that act, which falls, within the course of another that is bigger one.

Objection

Supposing a man has actually killed 'Caltra' and the same is instrumental in the killing of another Brāhmaṇa Viṣṇumitra, how can the destruction of the sin, caused by Viṣṇumitra's killing, be removed by the performance of penance, undertaken to destroy the sin of killing Caltra?

Answer

The doubt is out of place. The penance undertaken is for killing a Brāhmaṇa. The other penance also is for killing a Brāhmaṇa. The mention of Caltra or Viṣṇumitra is irrelevant. It does not matter whether Caltra is killed or Yajñadatta is killed, what matters is that a Brāhmaṇa is killed. Therefore, with the performance of twelve years' penance for killing a Brāhmaṇa, a smaller penance of six years, for instigating the killing of a Brāhmaṇa, becomes incidentally performed.

This incidental performance of smaller penance, is further illustrated by the performance of "Āgneyādi" sacrifices. The performance of 'Āgneya' and the like sacrifices is enjoined in the case of a person, who desires heaven or who entertains some other desire. Again, the same sacrifices are enjoined as compulsory for those, who are qualified. When a person proceeds to perform them for attaining heaven or achieving any other desire, he need not perform them again separately, as compulsory rites. Because their performance as compulsory rites is accomplished, while performing them with a desire for fruit.

The "Āgneyādiyāga" are six sacrifices, that constitute the Darśa-Pūrnāmāsa sacrifices. These Darśa-Pūrnāmāsa sacrifices are both Kāmya and Nitya. For their 'Nityatva' Cf. "ताम्यं यावज्जीव यजेत । विशतं वा दशानि जोगो वा विदमेत् ।" 'Āpastamba' 14-11 to 13. Also, Cf. "यावज्जीव दशपूर्णमासाभ्या यजेत ।" Śābara on Jaimini, X-8-14, Page 2083. (A person, after he sets up the three fires, has to perform Darśa-Pūrnāmāsa, throughout his life, till he becomes a Sannyāsin or for thirty years or till he becomes old).

Similarly, while performing a penance, extending over a greater period, the same penance, but extending over a smaller or equally long period becomes incidentally performed. This is technically known as "Prasanga"

Distinction between "Tantra" and 'Prasanga"(cf *Jaiminīya-nyāyamālā*, XII-I-I).

"Tantra" is a single performance with reference to two things, while "Prasanga" is incidental performance of a thing, during the performance of another, which is undertaken, with a different object:

cf. "उमयोद्देशेन सट्पनुष्ठानं तन्त्रम् । अन्योद्देशेनान्यदीयत्वापि सहानुष्ठानं प्रसङ्गम् ।"

—*Jaiminīya-nyāyamālā*, page 666

Illustrations would clarify the difference between the two, in a better manner

A person, who has invited Brāhmanas more than one, lights a lamp and keeps it in the midst of them for the benefit of all of them. Here, the lighting of a single lamp serves all the Brāhmanas hence it is "Tantra". One lamp serves the purpose of many simultaneously. This lamp was meant for all the Brāhmanas, that were invited, it does not incidentally serve other Brāhmanas.

In "Prasanga", the action is meant for one only, and incidentally serves the purpose of others. A rich man lights a lamp in order to illuminate his hall. If this same lamp incidentally throws its light on the street, and if it is lit, that is "Prasanga". The rich man had not lighted his lamp for illuminating the street, incidentally it became lit, by that act of his.

Thus, in "Tantra" a single performance of an action is meant, simultaneously for all, while in 'Prasanga' it is meant for one particular thing, and incidentally, it serves the purpose of others. This is the distinction between the two.

It may be pointed out here that in putting this construction on this verse of Yāj Smṛti, Viṣṇūśeṣvara has foreseen and applied a well-known principle of modern criminal jurisprudence viz concurrent running of two or more punishments. By special order, a court can direct the two sentences of imprisonment to be served simultaneously, so that a shorter sentence is taken to have been served along with the longer one.

PROBLEM OF IDENTIFICATION OF ŚĀNTĀ, THE WIFE OF RŚYAŚRNGA

By

MADHUSUDAN M. PATHAK

The episode of Rśyaśrnga is very famous. It occurs in Rāmāyaṇa, Mahābhārata and several other Purāṇas.

This sage Rśyaśrnga is said to have married Śāntā, the daughter of king Romapāda. It is narrated in the Viṣṇupurāṇa¹ that king Romapāda and Daśaratha were fast friends. Romapāda had no issue and hence his friend Daśaratha, the son of Aja gave his daughter Śāntā in adoption to him.

Dr R. C. Hazra,² while discussing this passage of Viṣṇupurāṇa writes, "Similar confusion is found in the statement made in Viṣṇupurāṇa iv, 18.3, that king Daśaratha (son of Aja) of Ayodhyā gave his daughter Śāntā in adoption to the childless king Dasaratha (son of Citraratha) of Aṅga, who was also widely known under the name of Romapāda. From this statement it is evident that according to the Viṣṇupurāṇa Śāntā was the daughter of Dasaratha of Ayodhyā. That this condition was clearly due to a traditional mistake based on a confusion between the two Daśrathas, who were contemporaries, is shown definitely by early epic and Purāṇic traditions recorded in the Mahābhārata (iii 110 26, 113 11, xii 233 34 xii 137 25), Harivaṃśa (1 31 46), Vāyupurāṇa (99 103), Matsyapurāṇa (48.95), Brahmapurāṇa (13 40), etc, which give out Śāntā as the daughter of Romapāda of Aṅga. As, in course of time, people became more and more ignorant of ancient Indian historical tradition and Daśratha of Ayodhyā attained a greater prominence through the Rama story, while his friend Romapāda dwindled into insignificance. Śāntā who was well-known as the daughter of Daśratha (of Aṅga), came to be taken by a section of people to be the daughter of Daśratha of Ayodhyā who alone occupied their mind and memory through the Rāmāyaṇa. This confusion which was undoubtedly of North Indian origin, influenced the North Indian re-

1. ब्रह्माण्डपुराणस्तोत्रो विविरेपस्त्वामधमेव । तन्निवृत्त्यो रोमपादस्य । यस्य दास्यो मित्र अज । यस्याः अपुत्रो दास्यस्यज्ञो नाम ब्रह्माण्डपुराणस्य बुद्धित्वे युजोः ।

Viṣṇupurāṇa (Gita Press Edition) IV 18 15-18.

2. Hazra R. C. Intro to Viṣṇupurāṇa, a system of Hindu Mythology and Tradition, by Dr H. H. Wilson, Punthi Pustak Calcutta-4 1961 p. g.

ensions of the Rāmāyana, in which additions and changes were made in accordance with this new connection of Śāntā, although the name of Śāntā's mother occurs neither in any of these recensions nor in any other place. It may be mentioned here that in the Bhāgavata-Purāṇa (ix 23 7-8) also the same mistake has been made with regard to Śāntā's parentage and it was on the basis of these statements of the Viṣṇu and the Bhāgavata-purāṇa and more particularly of those of the North-Western recension of the Rāmāyana that in Act I (verse 4) of his — Uttara-rāma-carita Bhavabhūti said

*'Kanyāṃ daśaratho rājā Śāntāṃ nāma vyajājanat
apatyakṛtīkām rājñe lomapāday yāṃ dadau'*

"King Daśratha (of Ayodhya) begot a daughter named Śāntā whom he gave in adoption to king Lomapāda"

In Act VI of the same work Bhavabhūti even quoted two verses from the said recension (and not from that of Bengal) with the express mention that these two verses occur in the concluding chapter of the Bāla-carita "

Before taking up the discussion of the issue proper it must be pointed out that Dr R C Hazra has given the reference of the parentage of Śāntā wrongly, i.e. to say he is wrongly quoting the reference of the Viṣṇupurāṇa³. There he says that the reference occurs in Viṣṇupurāṇa iv, 18 3. But in the Viṣṇupurāṇa, the reference to the parentage of Śāntā occurs in iv 18 16,⁴ (vide the trans of H. H. Wilson)

As it mentioned by H. H. Wilson, the Bāla-kāṇḍa of the Vālmīki Rāmāyana which contains the episode of R̥ṣyaśṅga, refers to the parentage of Śāntā.⁵ Here Sumantra tells Daśratha, the king of Ayodhyā, "Your son-in-law R̥ṣyaśṅga, will beget sons for you. I have narrated the episode to this extent only as it was narrated by Sanatkumar to me"

This shows clearly that Rāmāyana here identifies the father of Śāntā with Daśratha, the king of Ayodhyā and as such the above remark of H. H. Wilson holds good. Here Sumantra refers to R̥ṣyaśṅga as the son in law of Daśratha of Ayodhya.

³ Vide supra fn. 2.

⁴ Wilson H. H., The Viṣṇu Purana, a system of Hindu Mythology and tradition London, 1840 reprinted by Punthi Pustak Calcutta-4 1961 p 355

⁵ ऋष्यशङ्गस्तु जामाता पुत्रास्तव विधास्यति ।
सलकुमारकपितमेतावदशब्द मया ॥

This episode of R̥ṣyaśringa occurs in Mahābhārata also. There it is stated that Śāntā was the daughter of king Lomapāda.⁶ This Lomapāda was the same as the king Rompāda of Anga.⁷ H. H. Wilson writes while explaining here, "This is noticed in the Rāmāyana, in the story of the hermit Rishyaśringa, to whom Śāntā was given in marriage. Her adoptive father is called in the Rāmāyana, as he is in the Agni and Matsya Lomapāda the meaning is the same, 'hairy foot'."

The Bhāgavatapurāṇa also contains a reference to the parentage of Śāntā.⁸ In Bhāgavatapurāṇa IX. 23 7-8, it is stated that king Daśaratha of Ayodhyā gave his daughter Śāntā in adoption to his friend king Romapāda of Anga.

Thus R. C. Hazra's remarks are quite proper as far as these references in the Viṣṇupurāṇa and Bhāgavatapurāṇa are concerned.

In the prelude of his famous play Uttararamacarita, Bhavabhūti also refers to the parentage of Śāntā.⁹

Here Bhavabhūti mentions that Śāntā was the daughter of king Daśaratha of Ayodhya and he gave her in adoption to king Romapāda.

It seems that R. C. Hazra is right in his remark that Bhavabhūti follows Viṣṇupurāṇa and Bhāgavatapurāṇa when he describes Śāntā as the daughter of king Daśaratha of Ayodhya.

Thus we get two sets of references one of which describes Śāntā as the daughter of king Daśaratha of Ayodhyā given to king Romapāda in adoption and the other group of references describes her as the daughter of king Romapāda.

It seems that R. C. Hazra is quite right in his remark¹⁰ that it was on the basis of these references of the North Western Recension of Vālmiki Rāmāyana, that the confusion regarding parentage of Śāntā occurred.

6. मरुत्, बाह, म. तेमस्त्री, कायस्थस्, मत्, पथ, १.
विष्णु लोमपादस्य भ्रातृकारादभूत् गदितु ॥
निवर्तितेषु सस्येषु यस्मै शान्ता दत्ता नृप ।
लोमपादो दुहितरे सावित्री सविता ह्यया ॥

Mahabharata, (Gorakhpur Edition) III, 110 25 26.

7. H. H. Wilson, Viṣṇupurāṇa, a system of Hindu Mythology and Tradition, London, 1840, reprinted by Punthi Pustak, Calcutta 4 p. 355 fn. 16.

8. सुतो बभूवो यस्य ब्रतं विजयस्योभया ।
लोमपाद इति ह्येतत्सत्यं दशरथ हया ॥
शान्ता स्वभार्या प्रायच्छदुष्यशङ्का उवाह ताम् ।

Bhagavatapurāṇa (Gita Press ed.) ix, 23 7-8

9. बन्धो दशरथो राजा शान्तां नाम व्यभूजितम् ।
अपत्यद्वितयां राजा लोमपादाय तां ददौ ॥

Uttararamacarita Act, 1 4.

10. Vide Supra p. 9

The fact that the Northern Recension of Rāmāyana contained such additions and some sort of anomalies can be very well realised in the following remarks of Prof G H Bhatt, General Editor of the Critical Edition of Rāmāyana, and Editor of the Bālakāṇḍa. He writes in his introduction to the Bālakāṇḍa,¹¹ "A comparative study of N and S clearly shows that S has generally preserved the text of the R in an original or older form, while N has polished the text both from the view-point of form and matter"

The view of Prof G H Bhatt regarding the purity of the Southern recension of the Rāmāyana can be further corroborated by his opinion expressed in his introduction to the volume of Aranya-kāṇḍa.¹² "Antiquity of SR — It has again wonderfully preserved archaic forms to a greater extent and has thus maintained the older text of the Rāmāyana" Prof G H Bhatt quotes¹³ Dr H Jacobi to support his view, 'Such a process was suggested by Dr Jacobi seventy years ago in his illuminating book *Das Rāmāyana* (Bonn 1893, pp 7-9) He designates the southern Recension as indicating that it is the Recension of the commentators, the Bengali Recension as B and the Western Recension (which is now known as North-Western Recension) as A (pp 23) He then compares them and comes to the conclusion which may be briefly summarised as follows

(1) The facts show that C has preserved the older text in certain cases and other Recensions have changed it with a purpose that can be definitely perceived. It points to the assumption that the authors of the remaining Recensions had revised the text of C. Schlegel's view that the changes are due to the whims and caprices of sentimental and fastidious persons does not appear to be sound on a closer examination. It may be true in a poem of moderate size but not in an epic of vast extent like the Rāmāyana. It may be assumed that at the time of the fixing of the Recensions the institution of the rhapsodists or professional reciters of the Rāmāyana extant till then was in a flourishing condition and the text orally preserved by them had the authority of MSS. The rhapsodists (*Kāvyaopajivinaḥ*) were thus the real traditional preservers and proper originators of the Rāmāyana. They also possessed the classical education of their time"

After this Prof G H Bhatt expresses his opinion¹⁴ saying, "This view of Dr Jacobi is confirmed by a critical study of the Rāmāyana

11 Bālakāṇḍa, (Critical Edition) Introduction, p. xxxii Ed. Prof. G H Bhatt, Baroda 1960

12 Valmiki Rāmāyana Aranyakāṇḍa (Critical Edition, Baroda) — Introduction by Prof G H Bhatt, p. xxvi, Baroda, 1963

13 Ibid., p. xxix.

14 Ibid. p. xxix

MSS The Editors of the Critical Edition of the Rāmāyana have consequently come to the conclusion that the SR is superior to the NR and that the SR should form the basis of the Critical text of the epic" As regards the parentage of Śāntā, the Critical text of the Balakanda of the Rāmāyana states that she was the daughter of king Daśaratha of Ayodhyā, as Sumantra, one of the ministers of the king describes R̥ṣyaśṅga as his son-in-law, in I 8 22 (vide fn 5) But the critical apparatus of the St. 21-22 of the same sarga of Bālakaṇḍa has a substitute passage¹⁵ occurring in Ś1N̄VBD1—3 5 7, 9-13, M4. This substitute passage contains a reference to Śāntā as the daughter of king Lomapāda of Anga and not of king Daśaratha of Ayodhyā. R̥ṣyaśṅga is said here to be the son-in-law of king Lomapāda The words 'Svakām duhitaram' in this passage are noteworthy This suggests that the recension followed by the above MSS. did believe in Śāntā's being the daughter of king Romapāda of Anga, as 'svakām duhitaram' evidently means 'his own daughter' and not a 'daughter by adoption'

Thus it appears that the opinion among these recensions of Rāmāyana was divided regarding the parentage of Śāntā, and at least one recension held the belief that she was the daughter of king Romapāda of Anga.

Now therefore the question arises as to how is it that Sumantra refers to R̥ṣyaśṅga as the son-in-law of Daśaratha? To this question a probable explanation which can be given seems to me this, that king Daśaratha of Ayodhyā and king Romapāda of Anga were quite bosom friends, and the son-in-law of any one of them can be considered as the son-in-law of the other too Thus when viewed in this light the term 'Jāmātā' said about R̥ṣyaśṅga by Sumantra while addressing to Daśaratha can be very easily explicable Śāntā eventhough she was the daughter of king Romapāda, was as good as a daughter for Daśaratha of Ayodhyā too, and as such it is safe to concur with the view of R. C. Hazra that belief expressed in Viṣṇupurāṇa, about Śāntā's parentage was a confusion (vide Supra p 8)

15 तस्याभ्यागमनादेकं मृत्पुत्रस्य श्रीमत् ।
 सः स राजा विप्रिर्वच्छान्ता तस्यै प्रदास्यति ।
 स्वकीं दुहितरं भावीं कुर्यात् यत्नं निवृत्ताम् ।
 एव तस्य स जामाता भविष्यति महायया ।
 मोगपादस्य राजवंशेऽप्ययं प्रतापवान् ॥

*289 L. 4 8 under I 8 22 of the Crī. Ed. of the Balakanda

MAXWELL'S DEMON IN UPANISADS

By

RAMAKRISHNA RAO VETURY

Apart from their religious appeal, the Upanisads make a fascinating reading from the epistemological point of view. They actually describe a cosmic view and as such they can be regarded as a book of knowledge. Knowledge to be valid must be justified,¹ and the Upanisads abound in instances which clearly depict such painstaking efforts for justifying the conclusions that they present. Some of them are so rigorous and systematic that they can stand comparison with a few instances in modern scientific thought. One such example will be discussed below.

Maxwell's method

Students of Thermodynamics are quite familiar with Maxwell's demon which carries out an experiment for Maxwell. The experiment is described by Maxwell as follows

"If we conceive a being whose faculties are so sharp that he can follow every molecule in its course, such a being would be able to do what is at present impossible to us. We have seen that the molecules in a vessel full of gas at uniform temperature are moving with velocities by no means uniform though the mean velocity of any great number of them, arbitrarily selected, is almost exactly uniform (Maxwell's law of distribution of velocities)

Now let us suppose that such a vessel is divided into two portions A and B by a division in which there is a small hole, and that the 'demon', who can see the individual molecules, opens and closes this hole, so as to allow only the faster molecules to pass from A to B and only the slower ones to pass from B to A. He will thus, without expenditure of work, raise the temperature of B and lower that of A in contradiction to the second law of thermodynamics. Such a demon can also effect a separation of two gases mutually diffused without expenditure of work again in contradiction to the second law

Now, whatever results this demon may achieve by purely mechanical means may also be obtained by a sequence of suitable

¹ A study of the book "Knowledge and Justification" by John L. Pollock, Princeton University Press, 1974 is worthwhile

molecular encounters with no external interference at all. *The conclusion seems inevitable and in the light of this argument, the second law of thermodynamics cannot be applied to changes in a gas when they are observed in molecular detail. This conclusion is quite legitimate, because the second law does not hold for individual molecules but is a statistical law and has no meaning unless we deal with matter in bulk or in macroscopic state, involving a very large number of individuals.*

It is not necessary for those not familiar with physics, to understand the full meaning of the above account. It is enough if they grasp the sentences in italics in the above.

The above experiment visualised by Maxwell to prove his point, may be called a theoretical experiment. As described by Maxwell, it has all the trappings of a regular experiment. We can almost see the demon sitting at the gate of the enclosure and carrying out the job as prescribed by Maxwell.

Such theoretical experiments are helpful in proving propositions which are not by themselves capable of direct verification or proof.

The Problem in Upaniṣads

Modern Science is considerably based on observation and experimental verification. Every civilisation develops its knowledge, with the means at their disposal at the time. In older civilisations, the method was observation and meditation. (Here the word 'meditation' is used without its religious connotation. It only means deep and concentrated intellectual exercise with undivided attention to a problem similar to "Dhyana" in yoga system. In this sense we can say that Maxwell meditated and his demon is the product of this meditation.) In such a case, for the philosophers of those days theoretical experiments were a powerful tool. Evidence of this is found in the Upaniṣads. One very good example attracts our attention. It is given in (1) Bṛhadāraṇyaka (6 1 7 to 13), (2) Chāṇdogya (5 1 6-12) and (3) Kauṣītaki (2 14) & (3 3) Upaniṣads. The experimental procedure is described in a picturesque detail in the first two Upaniṣads.

This will be analysed in the following —

Problem

The human beings have a variety of faculties and normally function with those faculties. Some of them are speech, the eye, the ear, the breath etc. All these are called the vital breaths (Prāṇa) which

make for human activity. The problem is to identify which is the most important of these that accounts for life.

To solve the problem, a criterion is set. 'The one (of the vital breaths) after whose going off, the body is thought to be worse off, is the most excellent.' Now, how to decide this point?

Observation

The observational part is as follows. The blind live a normal life except for sight. The deaf cannot hear but otherwise they carry on. Even the imbeciles do everything except that their mind is retarded and so on for various faculties. But when one stops breathing, all his other faculties cease to function altogether and one is dead. Even now we put a finger at the nose of a dead person to ascertain whether he is dead or not.

Now this is not a good enough test to say that breath is the most important function in a human body, — not at any rate from a logician's point of view.

So, based on the above observations, the philosophers of the time thought of a theoretical experiment to prove the supremacy of breath. The experiment is described in both the *Bṛhadāraṇyaka* and *Chāndogya Upaniṣads* on similar lines.

The experiment

The story describes the issue as a fight between the various faculties for supremacy. So each of these faculties decided to leave men for one year and find out after one year how they fared. One faculty will be described below fully as given in the *Bṛhadāraṇyaka*.

'The eye went off. Having remained away a year, it came back and said 'How have you been able to live without me?''

They said 'As the blind not seeing with the eye, but breathing, speaking with speech, hearing with the ear, knowing with the mind, procreating with semen. Thus we have lived.' The eye entered in.

The eye faculty realised that what all can happen without it is one defect but otherwise a normal life for the person.

Now it is idle to question how the eye can go and come back. If we could swallow Maxwell's demon and build a whole structure of modern science on it, there is no reason why we should question the possibility of the eye leaving and coming. What is more important is to see that reasonable time of one year is allowed for reliable observations for each experiment. The above experiment has

been repeated for each faculty, one by one, for one year. The Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad describes in the following order (1) Speech, (2) The eye, (3) Ear, (4) Mind, (5) Semen and finally and (6) The breath.

The description for breath is as follows

"Then Breath was about to go off. As a large fine horse of the Indus-land might pull up the pegs of his foot-tethers together, thus indeed did it pull up these vital breaths together. They said 'Sir, go not off! Verily, we shall not be able to live without you'."

So all the faculties acknowledged the supremacy of breath, as the most fundamental for life. Thus the point is proved.

The Chāndogya-Upaniṣad describes similarly for the faculties listed below

(1) Speech, (2) Eye, (3) Ear, (4) Mind and (5) Breath

It is worthwhile noting that this Upaniṣad neglects semen (justifiably). The results are the same.

The Kauṣītakī Upaniṣad slightly modifies the experiment (2, 14). Here all the faculties leave the body at once. "It (body) lay, not breathing, dry, become like a piece of wood"

"Then speech entered it. It just lay speaking with speech"

"Then the eye entered it. It just lay speaking with speech (and) seeing with the eye"

And so on for others, including the ear, and mind.

Finally breath (prāṇa) entered it. "There upon indeed it rose," again proving the supremacy of breath.

This method has one advantage over the earlier method. One does not have to wait for one year to study the effect of an operation. Also it includes observations on people with multiple defects, like deaf-dumb-mute, etc.

All the three methods are also fine examples of the principle of study in isolation, which is an important aspect of modern science. When there is a plurality of parameters for study, each one has to be studied keeping the others unchanged.

The final results are summarised in Kauṣītakī Upaniṣad simply in terms of original observations in the following words (3.3)

"One lives with speech gone, for we see the dumb, one lives with eye gone, for we see the blind, one lives with ear gone for we

see the deaf, one lives with mind gone, for we see the childish, one lives with the arms cut off, one lives with the legs cut off, for thus we see But now it is the breathing spirit (prāna) , that seizes hold of and animates this body".

Conclusions

The final conclusion of the supremacy of the breath is linked up simply with the original observation through a series of theoretical experiments which establish on a firm basis what has been intuitively arrived at on the basis of natural observations This process of justifying an intuitive answer to a problem, can be called the 'Validation' after Michael Polyani Such instances of validation are not rare in modern sciences Polyani, in his book 'Personal knowledge' (The university of Chicago Press 1958, page 131) quotes from G Polya in the foot notes "When you have satisfied yourself that the theorem is true, you start proving it" On the same page he mentions examples of Archimedes and Gauss also

Polyani (Loc cit p 121) quotes from H Poincare four stages of Heuristics in modern science, particularly mathematics 1 Preparation, 2 Incubation, 3 Illumination and 4 Verification These four stages may be identified in the above example from the Upanishads as follows

- 1 Preparation — observations
- 2 Incubation — meditation
- 3 Illumination — intuitive answer
- 4 Verification — the experiment described above

This example also suggests another possibility The philosophers of the times were not content with inductive reasoning for arriving at conclusions If hundred crows are observed to be black, it is not adequate to prove that all crows are black for we do not know about the 101 crow If a 100 blind men are seen to be otherwise alright, it is not equally possible to generalise But as it is not possible actually to physically make a man blind and see the effects (the law does not permit experimental guinea pigs of humans) what could be thought of was only a theoretical experiment to enable them to come to a conclusion based on observations The significant part of this is that the Upanishads have made an extensive use of the observations of the phenomenal world within the means available to them to build up a super structure of a cosmic formula²

² The quotations from the Upanishads given above are all taken from The Thirteen Principal Upanishads, translated by Robert Ernest Hume second edition (Oxford University Press 1931) Maxwell's account is given in any text book of Heat & Thermodynamics for physics students.

ANNAM PARAM BRAHMA

(FOOD IS SUPREME BRAHMAN)

By

P. M. UPADHYE

Since Man has touched the soil of this world there has been an endless search and hunt for the sake of food. In the history of human life, hunger of food is the chief primary necessity for which all human efforts are directed to achieve this goal. This is irrespective of primitive stage and civilized stage and food occupies very important place in the life of human and non-human beings. This is precisely so because without food, life itself is impossible. The non-human beings, especially animals, wild or domestic, hunt out their food in the world and nature too helps them in getting food for sustaining their life.

In the primitive stage, human beings also relied mostly on nature for food but later on, as the civilization advanced from stone age onwards, human beings started moving towards the river bed side and tried their utmost to procure food by cultivating lands and growing gardens and vegetables and catching fish etc. When fire was invented, it was a boon to the human beings because they could cook the food and live peacefully.

It is a well known fact that there were tribal feuds or wars either for the sake of fertile land-viz. for food and for the sake of women-viz. for sex life in the history of the world without any exception.

The importance of food has been realised by the Vedic and post Vedic seers so much so that the entire Vedic civilization and culture fully rested on 'food'. The Vedic people asked for good food and progeny and for that purpose, they performed sacrifices in which Indra-Agni and other deities were invoked and praised so that they would grant food and progeny to the sacrificers.

Food, being the first and foremost necessity of human life, has been praised in glowing terms in the Vedic as well as post Vedic literature. Some of the examples are given below¹.

(1) Annam hi prāṇah — Aitareya Brāhmaṇa (VII-13)
Food is the vital breath viz. life

¹ For other references see Rv 10-117-3b, Rv 2 24-12 d, Jal Br 1-140 etc. also see Vedic concordance by M. Bloomfield.

(2) *Annām ha vai vājah* — (Taittirīya Br. 13.9.13).

Food is a nourishing material.

(3) *Annām va āyatanaṁ* — Śatapatha Br. 7.5.

Food is the place (house) (abode).

Apart from these stray sentences in the Vedic books in praise of food, the R̥gveda also contains *Annastuti*² and *annasūkta*.³ These Vedic references symbolise the following ideas about food.

(a) Food is the life. (b) Food is pleasure giving and unparalleled friend. (c) Food is the nourishment. (d) Food is beauty and importance-donor. (e) Food is called youth-giver. (f) Food is the cause of re-production of beings. (g) Food is Brahman. (h) From food alone beings grow and in it they become dissolved.⁴ Even Jñāneśvara, a great saint of Maharashtra considered *anna*-food as form of Brahman and also the cause of life.⁵ The Manusmṛiti says that from rain, food springs up and then follow the beings.⁶ The Gītā too proclaims that beings arise out of food.⁷ An act of eating food should not be looked upon as merely belly filling but it should be considered as a sacrificial act — (*yajñā-karma*). All these references indicate how food is highly valued by the ancient Indian seers. Their concept of food is indeed divine and food is viewed from this divine angle. In the past food was the most essential factor in human life as it is viewed today.

The Primitive Man depended totally on natural food but in course of time the civilised man started producing his food with natural resources like water, fertile fields, and with help of implement like ploughs drawn by cows, bulls and asses, etc. This was indeed a great land mark in the human history with reference to food.

Food was well protected and also stored for future needs in the past and this is testified by the achæological findings in different parts of India in which burnt particles of food-grains were noticed.

The word '*anna*' is defined as that which is eaten. It is four fold viz. (1) *bhakṣya* that which is eaten (2) *peya*-that which is drunk (3) *lehya*-that which is licked and (4) *coṣya* — which is sucked, food-taste or *Annarasa* is six fold — *madhura*-sweet, *āmla*-sour, *kṣāra*-salty, *kaṭu*-bitter, *kaṣāya* astringent — *Tikta* pungent or hot.^{8a} This description of food either in the books on medicine

2. Rg. 1-187.

3. 4-31-1.

4. See the word '*annam*' in the Vedic concordance by M. Bloomfield.

5. Jñāneśvari — 3-133.

6. Manusmṛiti — 3-76.

7. Gītā — 3-14.

8. See Bg. Gita XV —

8a. Bg. Gita — 17-9.

like Caraka samhita or in the philosophical books like Gītā etc will reveal the succinct knowledge of food in the past. The food is the saviour of life if properly used and digested. The proper balance of food is to develop healthy body and healthy mind. The proper balance of food can be brought about by using all natural sources of food such as roots, leaves, fruits and flowers, milk and milk products, cereals, rice wheat other kinds of corn, gram, sugar-cane, sugar and gur, honey fish and animals — their flesh etc. No where excess is allowed, otherwise, it is said 'annam mṛtuh'. For food, all natural resources are tapped and India being an agriculture country, agriculture occupies the predominant place for the sake of food. The land if properly cultivated, can yield better crops, fruits, leaves roots etc which constitute the very food-material. Therefore it is essential to tap and use all resources especially agriculture resources for making the country full of resources self sufficient in food. Hence the agriculture sector cannot be neglected.

Along with food the earth should also be taken into account. The earth is considered as 'Earth Goddess' — 'Prithvi-deva'ā'. There is one hymn⁹ on Earth in the R̥gveda. The Atharvaveda gives a graphic but beautiful description of the earth¹⁰. It says 'May the earth who bears manifold treasures grant me gold and jewels, wealth, etc. The Prithvi is that one which expands — 'prathate vistāram yati — sā prithvī.' The earth is designated in various words which signify her nature. She is supporter of the universe (Vīsvambhara), bearer of wealth (Vasudhā) mother goddess — (Mātṛdevatā), possessor of many jewels (bahuratnā).

It is mentioned in the Bhāgavatā Purāṇa¹¹ that king Prthu milled the earth for the purpose of food and (medicine) herbs. As said earlier earth cannot be separated from food, food is to be created from and in the earth, hence earth goddess was highly valued and praised in the past.

In the Indus valley civilization, the earth was considered as the goddess by the people of the Indus Valley, even the Vedic people too regarded the earth as the goddess. The entire Vedic culture had the agriculture as the basis and pastoral back ground of the Vedic age will also testify to this fact.

In connection of food, food distribution or anna-dāna should also be considered. Annadāna is valued as a virtue, piety is virtue. The Bhikṣusūkta praises the gift of food, etc in glowing terms¹². It

⁹ Rg. 1-191-6.

¹⁰ AV. 12-1-44.

¹¹ Bha. Pura. 4-18 Viṣṇu Pu. 1-13 etc.

¹² Rg. X-117.

says, 'He who gives the hungry one does not lose anything, but he who does not give, suffers from lack of support.¹³ He is not a friend who does not give food to the friends and faithful ally¹⁴ He who eats all alone, shares misfortunes also all alone.¹⁵ Even the Gītā says that he who does not give to others such enjoyments obtained through sacrifices, etc. is indeed a thief¹⁶ In India, all religions without exception, advocate charity of food, which will bring about merit to a man¹⁷ The spirit behind this principle is that one does not live for oneself but also for others, in a way, an individual life is subordinate to social life, that constitutes the very essence of democracy To feed a guest is also a virtue. In India all the festivals, nay all religious and social festivals, are directly connected with food We will hardly come across any ritual or sacrament or festival without reference to food Food is freely distributed to Brahmīns, beggars and the needy people. This is quite unique in Indian Culture

It will not be out of place to mention the practice of 'anna kūṭa' — in which many sweet meats of various kinds and other food items are placed before the idol of Kṛṣṇa on the 1st day of the 1st fortnight of Kārtika month It is a symbol of worship of the Govardhana mountain which is also called 'annakuṭa'¹⁸ Such is the importance of food which is equated with supreme Brahma annam — param Brahma

Out of 5 sheaths or Kośas in a human body one of them is 'annamayakosa', due to which gross body is maintained.¹⁹ Anna or food represents the lowest form in which the supreme soul is manifested

Thus this brief survey of the concept of food in ancient India will reveal that food was considered as the primary necessity as well as life force by the ancient Indians It has a vital role to play in Indian economic-religious political life even this day Agriculture is the very soul of food in India and food being the most essential thing for human as well as non human life, agriculture sector should not be neglected In fact agriculture alone will bring about the prosperity of India That is why late Lal Bahadur Shastri, the then Prime Minister of India gave a new slogan to the nation 'Jai Jawan-Jai Kīṣan' and here lies the spirit of India

13 Rg X-117-1-2.

14 Rg. X X-117-4.

15 Rg X-117-6.

16 Gītā 3-12.

17 annadanat paraṁ dānam . . .

18 See Bhāratīya Samskritī kośa — Vol I page 155

19 Tai. Up. 2/5.

EDUCATION IN ANCIENT GUJARAT

By

K. B. VYAS

Any study of the system of education in ancient and mediaeval Gujarat is bound to be handicapped by the lack of adequate material on the subject in the historical and literary records of this period. There was no tradition of writing social histories, or even political histories in early India. All that we can do is to glean references to education and learning scattered over the vast expanse of early literature, inscriptions, and other records, and piece them together to create a reasonable coherent picture.

These works seldom refer to any system of primary or elementary education in ancient Gujarat. But we do have elaborate description of the famous seats of learning, of celebrated scholars and men of letters, of philosophers and dialecticians of artists, architects and sculptors. We also come across references to their literary, scholastic and artistic achievements. These references, when pieced together, give an idea of the system of higher learning which prevailed then. It will correspond to the present system of university education in India and abroad.

We come across, incidentally, a few details of elementary, popular education, which must have formed the basis of higher education. Thus, the study of the educational systems in early Gujarat becomes essentially a study of the successive phases of the renaissance of learning in early Gujarat. In order to comprehend the renaissance in the Caulukyan period during the reigns of Siddharāja of legendary fame, and his equally illustrious successor Kumārapāla, and an equally glorious renaissance in the Vāghela period, initiated and presided over by the scholar-minister Vastupāla, it is necessary first to get acquainted with the earlier renaissance during the rule of the Maitrakas of Valabhi so as to have a proper perspective. Similarly, we will have occasion to describe the conditions that prevailed in the period following the conquest of Gujarat by Muslims, when the earlier traditions started acquiring the later mediaeval mould, which persisted almost up to the advent of the British.

¹ Being the third article in the series of research papers on Indology prepared under the auspices of the Springer Research Scholarship Endowment of the Bombay University.

What is known as Gujarat today dates as a political and cultural entity from the time of the Caulukyas, i.e., from c 10th century A D. In the still earlier period — the Purāṇic and ancient period — Gujarāt proper, from the north of the river Mahī was known as Anarta, Kāthiāwād (now known as Saurāṣṭra), was known by the name of Surāṣṭra, while the southern region, to the south of the rivers Mahī and Narmadā was known as Lāṭa.

The cultural tradition of this region, however, is as old as the earliest Purāṇas, for, Gīrinagara, Prabhāsa and Dvārka in Saurāṣṭra, Anandanagara in Anarta, Bhṛgukaccha and Stambhatīrtha in Lāṭa, are mentioned as celebrated centres of learning in the Purāṇas as well as in the Jaina canons. Prabhāsa and Bhṛgukaccha were also known as great emporia of international trade and commerce and had therefore absorbed foreign influences to a remarkable extent.

We will limit ourselves, however, only to the historical times, and particularly to the two distinct epochs of the glory of Gujarat — the Maṭraka period, and the Caulukya and Vāghelā periods which form a continuous cultural epoch, emphasizing the conditions that prevailed in these periods.

Gīrinagara seems to be a famous centre of Brahmanical culture in the historical times as well, as attested by the three celebrated inscriptions spanning well over half a millennium — the rock-edicts of Asoka written in the western Prakṛt speech of the period, the inscription of the local Śaka-Kṣatrapa Rudradaman written in Sanskrit in ornate classical epic style, and the elegant Sanskrit Prasastī of the Gupta emperor Skandagupta. These inscriptions presuppose a flourishing centre of learning and culture at Gīrinagara. There must have been similar centres of learning in Prabhāsa and Dvārka in Saurāṣṭra and Anandanagara in North Gujarat as well.

But as we move later in history, we come across copious evidence of an outstanding University centre of learning at Valabhī (modern Valā in the Bhāvnagar district) in the time of the Maṭrakas. It ranked so high in Buddhist learning that the great Chinese pilgrim Yuan Chwang compared it with the world famous University of Nālanda. It accommodated hundreds of Saṅghārāmas where no less than 6000 Buddhist bhikkhus studied Buddhist canons. It was here that the great teachers Guṇāmatī and Sthīramatī composed their works. Chwang's junior contemporary I tsing compares the University of Valabhī with most celebrated University centres in China. Besides being famous for teaching Buddhist scriptures and Buddhist philosophy, Valabhī Vidyāpīṭha was also known as a great centre of Brāhmanical lore and Jaina learning.

.- The system of-teaching was as follows At the age of about 5 years or so a child was imparted the knowledge of alphabets in the schools of 'lipi-vidyā' (लिपिविद्या). Then, after the 'upanayana' ceremony, the student at the age of 7 or 8 years started learning 'śabda-vidyā' or grammar, which began with learning the Pāṇinian sūtras by heart, followed by learning the dhātupāṭhas, Khulatraya or morphological sūtras, and the Vṛtti or commentary on Pāṇinian sūtras. Students, desirous of having advanced knowledge of grammar then started learning Patañjali's Mahābhāṣya on Pāṇini and Bhartṛhari's Vṛtti on Patañjali, and his other treatises like 'Vākya-padiya'.

After mastering grammar, students turned to the study of literary classics. They include Bhāravi, Māgha, Kumāradāsa, and the works of Bāna, Mayūra and Amaru. The composition of Bhaṭṭakāvya has been a typical product of the Maṭraka age. The influence of Sanskrit classical poetry is distinctly noticeable in the language and style of the Maṭraka inscriptions.

Having mastered grammar, students turned to Logic, Astronomy, Medicine, Architecture (śilpa-vidyā) and fine arts (kalā). Brāhmana students studied the Vedas. They would start studying a Vedic saṃhitā — some families had a tradition of studying more than one Saṃhitās — at the age of 7 or 8 years, alongwith their study of the rudiments of Pāṇinian grammar. Initially, they just learnt the correct recitation of Saṃhitā with proper intonation and then at a later stage tried to comprehend the bhāṣya. The study of the Maṭrāyaṇī Śākhā of Kṛṣṇa Yajurveda and the Vajasaneyī Śākhā of Śukla Yajurveda was more in vogue in Gujarat. Sāmaveda, and the science of music (gāndharva-vidyā) pertaining to it, was also studied.

The Buddhist students preferred to study Tripiṭaka (consisting of Vinaya-piṭaka, Sutta-piṭaka, and Abhidhamma-piṭaka), instead of the Vedas. In the Gujarat of the Maṭraka age Hīnayāna was more prevalent. As testified by I-tsing, the works of Nāgārjuna and Āryadeva, and ~~Jaṇaka and Vasubandhu were extensively studied.~~ The well-known teachers Guṇamatī and Sthiramātī have written their famous works in this period in Surasṭra.

Buddhist students also favoured the study of Nyāya or logic. They studied with care the works of Diṇnāga and Vasubandhu. Valabhi University was celebrated for a specialised study of Buddhist logic (nyāya-vidyā).

Valabhi was equally well-known for Jaina learning. Nāgārjuna set the āgamic text in Valabhi about 300 A.D. About a century and a half later (in 454 A.D.) Devarddhigani Kṣamāsramana

again reset the Āgama text in Valabhi, which is now followed by Śvetāmbara Jainas all over India. Scholars like Jinabhadragani Kṣamāśramana wrote Bhāṣyas on Jaina āgamas, commentators like Jinadāsaganī Mahattara wrote Cūṛnis thereon, while distinguished philosophers like Haribhadrāsūri wrote Vṛttis on them.

Administration of justice required a deep knowledge of the 'smṛtis' comprising of Śrautasūtra, Gṛhyasūtra, Dharmasutra and Dharmaśāstras. The priests studied the former two, but the rest — Kings and administrators of justice in particular — preferred to study Dharmaśāstra, especially 'Manusmṛti'. Probably 'Kāmandakīya Nitisāra' and the relevant portions of the Rāmāyana and the Mahābhārata, which deal with Hindu polity, were also studied as necessary equipment for judicial administration.

For princes there were also special courses of study equipping them for their duties as rulers. The study of Dhanurveda and Śastravidyā was essential for them. The detailed description of the prince's school, in Bāṇa's Kādambarī, instituted for the education of Candrāpīḍa, gives an idea how this must have been done.

For the Vaisyas the study of Vārtā — i.e., commerce, agriculture and animal husbandry (pasupālana) — was prescribed. Though no works in these subjects have come down to us we learn from references scattered here and there in works like Varāhamihira's 'Brhatsamhitā' that the science of architecture (Vāstuvidyā) and sculpture was quite well-developed then, as attested by the various architectural monuments and sculptural remains of this period. The science of metallurgy, of assessment of jewels, and crafts like carpentry, smithy and other handicrafts were also quite well developed.

Fine arts like music and dancing (gīta-vādyā-nṛtya) are referred to more than once in the works of this period which indicates that arrangements existed for a specialised training in them.

The well-known centres of learning in the Gujarat of the Maṭraka period were, as mentioned earlier, Valabhi, Anandanagara (modern Vadnagar), Khetaka (mod. Kairā), Gīrnagar, Bhṛgu-kaccha and Sīmhapur (mod. Shihor). Of these, Valabhi was the most famous as a seat of learning. It is noted in the Kathāsarit-sāgara, an abridgement of the Bṛhatkathā of Guṇāḍhya, that a young Brahmin student Viṣṇudatta travelled to Valabhi from as distant a place as Antarvedi in search of higher learning. There was very keen competition among the aspirants for admission to the Valabhi University. It specialised in the study of grammar (śabdavidyā), logic (nyāya), and abhidharma (Buddhist lore), but it also taught with distinction the science of architecture and medicine. That great

works like Bhaṭṭikāvya (a unique dual exercise in grammar and epic composition) and Nayacakra of Mallavādi (a distinguished treatise in logic) are evidences of the heights attained in education in these fields.

These institutions also catered to the requirements of local students, who were yet to qualify for admission to the University and were acquiring just rudiments in the sciences of their choice. There was also provision for women-students in some of the 'vihāras'. Probably, they were mostly, 'bhikkhunis' or nuns.

This great centre of learning was destroyed when Valabhi fell to the Muslim onslaught in 845 A. D.²

Thus ended a glorious chapter in the cultural renaissance of ancient Gujarat.

From the ashes of Valabhi arose, a century later, Anahilvād, which soon became the heart of political and cultural Gujarat. During this intervening period Śrīmāla or Bhinnamāla, adjoining to the Northern border of Gujarat, became a sort of cultural capital of Gujarat. It was indeed the capital of Gurjaras from the 8th century A. D. till about the middle of the 12th century A. D. It was destroyed by Ulughkhan the commander of the Muslim army of Allaūddin Khālji early in the 14th century A. D. A graphic account of this sacrilege has been preserved in the '*Kāhnaḍade Prabandha*' (Khaṇḍa III). According to the '*Prabhāvākacarita*' and '*Śrīmālapurāṇa*' Śrīmāla or Bhinnamāla was a prosperous city throbbing with religious and cultural activities, with a thousand Brahmasālās (schools of Brahmanical learning) and four thousand maṭhas (seats of Brahmanical philosophical studies). That this was not just a myth but an actual historical fact is proved by the description of the town in Padmanābha's famous mediaeval epic poem '*Kāhnaḍade Prabandha*' (III 22-28), where he says that "forty five thousand Brahmins resided in Bhinnamāla — like gods in their resplendence — living a life of purity, austerity and learning. They had learnt all the four Vedas with the Vedāṅgas and had mastered all eight systems of grammar. They professed fourteen sciences (vidyas), eighteen Purāṇas, medicine, music, astronomy, prosody, dramatics, and other subjects. They maintained *agnihotra* in every home. They knew the intricacies of Smṛti (Dharmasastra). They never failed to perform the Brahmanical religious rites. Sacrifices were performed there every day. To meet them was a purifying experience. They were like the eighty-eight thousand Purāṇic ṛṣis reborn in this age."

2 According to विविधतीक्ष्णकल्प Valabhi was destroyed in 789 A. D.

It is not surprising that this seat of Brahmanical scholarship produced great poets like Magha and astronomers like Brahmagupta. In spite of Yuan Chwang's testimony that Buddhism also flourished in Śrīmālā, in the absence of any important Buddhist work found to have been composed there, we can conclude that it occupied only a minor role there.

But Jainism and Jain learning did flourish there alongside Brahmanical lore. Siddharṣi's 'Upamati-bhava-prapañcakathā' saw its conclusion in this place. Siddharṣi mentions with respect Haribhadra sūri, the well-known Jain philosopher who had composed the philosophical treatise 'Saṅgahārṣa-samuccaya', a Prakrit *dharma-kathā* 'Samarāñcakahā', a satirical Kathā 'Dhūrtakhyāna' and several other works. In the nearby Jhalore Udyotanasuri composed 'Kuvālayamālā'.

Śrīmālā or Bhūnnamālā was thus the heart of the culture of Gujarat, before Anahilvād was founded. Then, during probably the 10th and the 11th centuries A.D. there was an exodus from Śrīmālā to the neighbouring regions and to Anahilvād, in particular, and Śrīmālī Brahmins and Banias and Porvād Banias, Śrīmālī sons and several artisan castes migrated to Anahilvād much in the same way as traders and business men moved from Surat to Bombay under the pressure from Marathā marauders.

Anahilvād was founded by a Chāvdā chieftain Vanaraj on the banks of the Sarasvatī river in V.S. 802. But it was only during the reign of Mūlarājdeva Solankī who succeeded the last dissolute Chavda chief Sāmantsinh, that Anahilvād started acquiring increasingly greater importance. As the Caulukya kingdom gradually expanded Anahilvād assumed greater political and cultural importance and became a famous seat of learning and culture in the time of Jayasimhadeva Solankī, immortalized in tradition as Siddharāja, and his illustrious successor Kumārapāla. Its political eminence could be gauged from its extent too, for, in Kumārapāla's reign Gujarāt held under its sway the adjoining land of Konkan, and regions of Rājās thān, Cutch, Saurāṣṭra and Mālva. This was the heyday of the glory of Gujarat.

After a short spell of political uncertainty and weakness during the reigns of Kumārapāla's successors, Gujarat again grew much in political stature and vastly in cultural eminence during the Vāghelā rule, particularly under the aegis of the unique scholar-minister Vastupal.

There was a spurt in the pursuit of learning during the period and Gujarat saw a galaxy of poets, scholars, philosophers, dialecti

cians, astronomers, crowding the period, the like of which it had never seen before. This period was coincident with a parallel renaissance in the neighbouring region of Dhārā under the aegis of kings like Muñja and Bhoja of traditional fame. Even in the history of the entire Āryāvarta such periods have come only after very long intervals, as, for instance, during the reigns of Gupta emperors Candragupta and Samudragupta there was a great renaissance of Sanskrit learning, which again reappeared in full glory in the time of the Maukharī emperor Harṣa.

The Caulukya renaissance started during the reign of Mūlarāja-deva, the founder of the Caulukyan dynasty in Gujarat. Alongside the battles he fought and conquests he made, he also built the famous temple of Rudramahālaya in Siddhapur, the first great monument of the Caulukyan period, invited learned Brahmin scholars from the North Indian centres of learning and settled them in Gujarat. He, thus, laid the foundation of a glorious cultural renaissance, which saw unprecedented heights in the reigns of his two great successors, Siddharāja and Kumārapāla. The presiding genius of this unique movement was Ācārya Hemacandra, whose colossal learning, great originality and versatility had earned him the epithet 'Kālikāla sarvajña'. A Jain pontiff himself, he composed, besides Jain religious and philosophical works, a memorable treatise on grammar (Siddha Hemacandra Śabdānuśāsana) prepared at the instance of King Siddharāja, standard works on prosody and poetics ('Chandonuśāsana and 'Kāvyaṇuśāsana') a historical mahakāvya (Dvyasraya) describing the Caulukya dynasty on the pattern of Bhaṭṭi kāvya, a Sanskrit lexicographical work (Abhidhāna Cintāmaṇi) a Prakrit lexicon (Desanāmamala) a work on Botanical terms, Nighaṇṭusesa), and numerous stavanas or devotional poems.

Though Siddharāja was a Śaivite himself he had boundless respect for Hemacandra. His magnanimous patronage was responsible in no small measure for the wide publicity that Hemacandra's learned works received.

Hemacandra had a large circle of able disciples who were themselves great poets scholars and philosophers (dārsanikas). Among them stand out Rāmacandra famous for his numerous dramas and a noteworthy treatise on dramatics (Nāṭyadarpana), and Gunacandra, Mahendrasuri, Devacandra and Yasascandra. Other luminaries also illumined this period — the blind poet Śrīpala who wrote a prasasti kāvya to celebrate Siddharāja's construction of the Sahasralinga lake and another prasasti, which is now placed in the fort of Vadnagar, Śrīpala's son Siddhapāla a poet of note Somaprabacarya the author of the Prakrit work 'Kumārapālaprati-bodha' Vagbhata the author of

the celebrated work on poetics, 'Vāgbhaṭāḷankāra', Prahlaḍanadeva, the writer of 'Pārthaparākramavyāyoga', Yaśahpāla, the author of 'Moharājaparājaya', Ācārya Malayagiri, the well-known commentator on Jaina āgamas, Pūrnabhadra, the author of 'Pañcākhyāna', an ornate version of the collection of the world-famous fables of the 'Pañcatantra'

In literary records of this period we get glimpses of the system of education prevailing in this period. It does not seem to differ materially from the earlier period in its pattern. According to the commentator on Hemacandra's 'Dvyāśrayakāvya' the Sahasralinga lake was surrounded by 1008 Śiva temples and 108 temples of goddess (Durgā), and innumerable Satrasālās, teaching a variety of subjects, and maṭhas, where teachers and students used to reside and board free of charge. They studied there Trividyā (Vārtā, Kṛt and Vāṇijya), the Vedas, polity, logic, grammar and literature, six Vedangas, mīmāṃsā or sacrificial lore, medicine, Smṛtis, and dharma śāstra, and even Carvāka philosophy. Verily, the Sahasralinga lake must be looking like a vast University campus. All religions flourished side by side, and there was provision for all systems of philosophy including the Buddhist philosophy and its system of logic. There were other similar centres of learning at Broach, Prabhāsa, Śuklatīrtha, Modhera, Cambay, Candrāvati, Vaḍnagar, Siddhapura, Vardhamānapura, Darbhāvātī, and Vaṭapadra.

There is evidence to indicate that in Anahilvād and other larger towns on festive occasions Sanskrit dramas were staged in the temples before vast audiences. Usually this was done at the instance of a king or a high dignitary or a business magnate. Thus 'Karnasundarī Nāṭikā' composed by Bilhana was staged in the Ādināth temple at Pātan by the orders of Śantu Mehtā a Caulukya minister. This presupposes an adequate knowledge of Sanskrit and Prakṛt among the audiences. This could not have been possible unless there was provision for learning Sanskrit in Paṭhasālās.

The next epoch — the period of Vaghela rule in Gujarat — is, in essence, a continuation of the glorious Caulukyan renaissance. If Hemacandra was the presiding spirit of the Caulukyan renaissance, Vastupāla, the scholar minister of the Vāghelā kings was the guardian angel of the renaissance of this later period. Under his patronage, flourished a host of poets, scholars, and philosophers, architects and sculptors who lent unique glory to this age. Vastupāla's boundless munificence attracted a host of scholars. Thus poets of distinction like Someśvara, Bālacandra, Arisūnha Amaraçandra sūri, gathered around him, and made great contribution to Sanskrit learning and literature. Vastupāla's craze for building temples and

monuments, attracted architects and sculptors from all over Gujarat. It is recorded that besides Jain temples he built a number of Śiva temples and established hospitals (ragnālayas), Brahmanical schools (brahmasālās), and maṭhas (or places of residence for sanyāsins). The temples at Gīrnar and Ābu — particularly those at Mt. Ābu — built by Vastupāla and his brother Tejapāla, are lasting monuments of great architectural beauty, unsurpassed in the annals of mediaeval Indian architecture. The sculptured figures are so delicate and fresh that they transport you to a fairy-land of dreams. Fabulous amount of money — over twelve crores of rupees — was spent on the temples at Ābu alone and an almost equal amount was spent at Gīrnār.

As described earlier, the munificence of Vastupāla attracted a host of eminent scholars and poets and earned him the epithet 'laghu Bhojarāja'. Himself a scholar and a poet of repute — 'Kavi-kuñjara' and 'Kavicakravartī' were his birudas — Vastupāla was a great connoisseur of art and literature. He himself composed the 'Naranārāyanānanda Mahākāvya' and even copied out in his own handwriting Udayaprabhasūri's 'Dharmābhyudaya Mahākāvya'. The Sanskrit anthologies attribute a number of sūktis to him.

Amongst the circle of poets and scholars that gathered around him, the foremost was Somesvara or Somesvaradeva, the family-priest and the poet laureate of the Caulukya king, Bhīmadeva II. He composed 'Surathotsava', elaborating the episodes in the 'Durgasaptasatī' of the Markaṇḍeya Purāṇa, 'Kīrti Kaumudī', a mahākāvya eulogizing the exploits and the meritorious deeds of Vastupāla, a drama 'Ullāla Rāghava', based on the story of the Rāmāyana, which was staged in the famous temple of Dvārakā, and an anthology of the subhāṣitas, 'Karnāmṛtaprapā'. Somesvara was a great friend of Vastupāla. He spanned the period of Vastupāla's literary activities and outlived him by 16 years.

The other outstanding scholar to embellish the literary circle of Vastupāla, was Harihara, a direct descendant of Śrī Haṛṣa, the author of 'Naiṣadhīyacarita'. He was an accomplished poet and a renowned scholar. Several subhāṣitas are attributed to him. On occasions he recited relevant verses from the 'Naiṣadhīyacarita'. It was he who acquainted the literary world of Gujarat with the 'Naiṣadhīyacarita'. The two earliest known commentaries on 'Naiṣadhīyacarita' — the Vidyādhara Tīka (1238-1261 A.D.) and the tīka of Candu Paṇḍit (1297 A.D.) were both written in Gujarat and follow the text as handed down in the manuscripts of the poem preserved in the Grantha Bhaṇḍāras of Gujarat.

Nānākabhūi or Nānāka, was another scholar who adorned Vastupāla's court. He came from an affluent family of Brahmin scholars. He founded a *Sarasvatīśaḍaṇ* or *Vidyālaya* in Prabhāsa, where the river Sarasvatī meets the sea. Several stray poems are found attributed to him, though no entire work of his has as yet come down.

Thakkur Arisimha, and his disciple Amaraśaṇḍrasūri, both poets of distinction and well-versed in the science of poetics, were other distinguished members of Vastupāla's circle. Arisimha's 'Sukṛta Saṁkīrtana mahākāvya', eulogizing the works of Vastupāla, and Amaraśaṇḍrasūri's poems 'Bālabhārata' and 'Padmānanda mahākāvya' and his treatise on poetics, 'Kāvyaśaṇḍpalatā' are well-known works of this period.

Similarly, Vijayasenaśaṇḍrasūri's 'Upadeśataṛaṅgiṇī' in Sanskrit, and 'Revantaśaṇḍrasūri' in later Apabhraṁśa, Udayaprabhaśaṇḍrasūri's 'Dharma bhyudaya mahākāvya' or 'Saṅghapaticarita', and 'Sukṛtakīrtikalloḥini', 'Jinaprabha's Prabandhāvalī', a source-work of the prabandhas or historical episodes of this period, Naṛaśaṇḍrasūri's 'Nyāyakaṇḍali', 'Jyotiśśāra', 'Prakṛt-Prabodha' — works on logic, astronomy and grammar — besides a *ṭikā* on Muṛāri's 'Anargha Rāghava' and on Naṛeṇḍraprabhaśaṇḍrasūri's 'Alaṁkāra Mahodadhī', written at the instance of Naṛaśaṇḍrasūri's guru Naṛeṇḍraprabha, Balacandraśaṇḍrasūri's 'Vasanaṭavilāsa' — a mahākāvya devoted to the life and exploits of Vastupāla, Jayasimhaśaṇḍrasūri's 'Hammiramaḍamaṛḍana', a play describing the inroads of Muslims during the reign of Vastupāla, and a *praśasti* of Vastupāla and Tejaśaṇḍrasūri's 'Māṇikyacandra's well known commentary, 'Saṁketa' on Maṁḍaṭa's 'Kāvyaśaṇḍprakāśa' — these are some of the celebrated literary works composed during this period.

Mention should be made here of Anupamā, the wife of Tejaśaṇḍrasūri, herself a poetess of note, and a distinguished scholar of philosophy, who was given the epithet 'Śaḍḍarśanaṁmātā'.

We should also mention here Yaśovira, a minister of King Udayasimha of Jhalore, himself a Jain Bana, who has been praised by Somesvara as 'Vagdevatāśuta' and described as 'Kaviṇḍrabandhu' in contemporary inscriptions. He was a connoisseur of art and architecture. When asked his opinion about the temples at Ābu, he drew the attention of Śobhanaḍeva, the chief architect, to a few of the blemishes in the construction — some of which were mystical and esoteric, while others pertained to defects in the layout or design. The fact that his opinion as a connoisseur of art was sought shows how highly he was esteemed for his knowledge of art and architecture and his keen insight into their subtleties.

Besides literature and philosophy, other branches of study like medicine and astronomy were also pursued assiduously during this period. Nāpārjuna, well-known for his proficiency in Jain Āgamic literature was also a proficient master of alchemy (pāradavidyā). He has written 'Rasaratnākara', probably the first work of its kind in India.

The science of medicine was pursued for generations by the Śrīgoda and Rāyakāl Brahmins and the Prajorā nāgaras of Gujarat. Soḍhala (c. 12th century A.D.), a Rāyakāl Brahmin of Vatsagotra, who flourished in the reign of the Caulukya King Bhimadeva II, wrote two works on medicine — 'Gadanigraha', and 'Guṇa-sangraha'. The former is a treatise on the diagnosis of diseases and their treatment, while the latter is a work on the properties of medicinal herbs — a sort of materia medica. Yaśodhara who flourished in Junagadh, a century later, has written a work on alchemy — 'Rasaprakāśasudhākara'.

As we have already noted earlier, these periods saw considerable progress in astronomy, which began with Brahmagupta, the author of the celebrated 'Brahmasphuṭasiddhānta', who flourished in the reign of the Chāpa King Vyāghramukha in 638 A.D., and was pursued by numerous scholars in the Caulukya and Vāghelā periods.

During these epochs architecture and sculpture attained unprecedented heights, as attested by the temples at Abu of such superb beauty, the famous sun-temple at Modherā, the Rudra-mahālaya of Siddhapur, the step-well of Rāṇivāv, and the lake Sahasralinga at Aṇahilvād Pāṭaṇ, and the beautiful sculptured panels on the gates at Dabhoi and Jhinhuvādā. These wonderful specimens of architecture presuppose provision for advanced training in the arts of architecture and sculpture.

The Rajput rulers, from the 9th or 10th century upto the close of the Hindu period, gave munificent donations to scholars in the holy places like Prabhāsa, Dvārakā, Śuklatīrtha, and in the metropolitan towns like Valabī, Pāṭaṇ, Nāndipuri and Bhṛgukaccha, which were renowned centres of learning. The schools run by renowned scholars were maintained out of these donations. The students' education and board was free of charge. Like the Buddhist monasteries of the earlier period, Brahmin temples and maṭhas and the Jain Upāśrayas were famous seats of learning. There is ample evidence that kings maintained Sarasvatimandiras, i.e., schools attached to the temples. Several schools also provided for the teaching of music and dancing.

With these centres of learning were attached rich libraries of books on palm-leaf and on paper. Such libraries existed in several of the towns of note. They date from the Caulukyan period, but they got an impetus during the age of Vastupāla, who founded the famous Jain Jñānabhaṇḍāras at Aṇahilvād, Cambay, and Broach. There must have been similar libraries attached to the Brahmanical Sarasvatī-saḍans also, but they gradually went out of existence, after the repeated onslaughts of Muslims, whose main targets were the Brahmanical seats of learning. The Jain Bhaṇḍaras have, fortunately, escaped these ravages and have been our main source of the study of literature, philosophy and art of this period.

We come across evidence of education of women in the Prabhaṇḍas. Mīnaladevī — mother of the legendary King Siddharāja — once acted as a judge in the dialectical dispute between Kumudacandra and Devasūri, and earned the bīruda 'Vāḍidevata Maṇayallā'. Similarly, Anupamā, Tejapāl's wife was a poet in her own right. Udayana's daughter looked after the administration of her father's estates. Women of aristocratic families in Aṇahilvād Pātan were proficient in the arts of music and dancing. Higher education among women was, probably confined to the Brāhmin, Kṣatriya and other aristocratic classes only.

In contrast with the copious information available on the system of higher education and traditions of higher learning, we have very scanty references to the indigenous system of primary or elementary education. It is possible that the Mahākāvyas and Nāṭakas, the scientific treatises on medicine and astronomy, and the Prabhaṇḍas offered no occasion for description of primary education. Only at one place, a reference to elementary education has survived — in the 'Vimalaprabandha' of Lāvāṇyasamayasūri (V S 16th century) — when the poet had occasion to describe how Vimala as a child first went to school. Lāvāṇyasamaya describes the occasion thus —

"When the son became five years old, parents thought of sending him to a school. The occasion was celebrated with festivities — relations and acquaintances were invited in a gathering and feasted sumptuously. Baskets were filled with pop-corn and fried grams for distribution to the poor on the way. The school-going boy was clad in costly robes. A floral dress (khumpa) adorned his head. Riding on a horse, he commenced his first visit to a school, heralded by a band of musicians, and accompanied by a procession of respectable gentry of elders. When they reached the school the boy laid his writing materials before the teacher and paid his respects to him. The teacher chanted in his ear the 'Sarasvatā-mantra' and wrote on

the board the alphabet, and declared a holiday for the other students, to celebrate the occasion. Sweets were distributed amongst the students. Women in the procession started singing songs appropriate to the occasion. The father of the boy presented costly garments to the Pandit — the school-teacher. Then as time passed, and the boy had to begin new chapters, the Pandit demanded 'dakṣiṇa' on every such occasion. If the boy did not progress well in his studies, he was afraid his teacher would chastise him. To escape that he gave the Pandit money and goods surreptitiously, without the knowledge of the parents. Such was the manner in which he got his rudiments of education. Then he attended a shop to get acquainted with the practices of trade and commerce" ('Vimala Prabandha', III 28 38)

This description refers at length to the elementary schools, which just taught the rudiments of reading and writing, known in the early modern period as 'Gaṁaṭhī schools'. They catered to the needs of the business community who needed to learn three Rs for book keeping and accounts in their trade.

The Brahmanical schools — 'Sarasvatisādanas' must have a pattern much different from this, emphasising the learning of Pāṇinian grammatical sūtras by rote, and recitation of Veda saṁhitās correctly and with proper intonation. These schools probably date from very early times — earlier than even the Maṭṭrakas. The same pattern survived almost to the advent of the British period. For the Kṣātrīyas — Rājputs of the mediaeval period — there must have also existed schools of military training, organised and supervised by the 'rājapurohita'.

We are curious to learn what sort of books were used in these schools. The old Indian tradition of elementary education was predominantly oral, relying more on recitation and learning by heart than on written books, which must have been a rare commodity in the early period of palm leaf and then of paper manuscripts. But, all the same, books did exist and were used by students as attested by the elementary books on grammar, like Kulamāṇḍana's 'Mugdhavabodha' and other Auktikas, and various 'Bālāvabodhas' on the religious and the philosophical treatises of this period, that have so far come down to us. There must have been innumerable elementary books of this kind, but few of them seem to have been preserved, perhaps because, these elementary books had hardly any literary significance and were not, therefore, thought worth preserving. In spite of this quite a few auktikas and bālāvabodhas have come down, which fact throws interesting light on the system of secondary and higher education prevailing then.

Such is, in the barest outline, a picture, neither detailed nor coherent, of the system of education that prevailed in Gujarat during its two golden periods — the period of Caulukyan renaissance and the succeeding period of renaissance, which flourished in the Vāghelā period, mainly supported by the munificent patronage of the great scholar-statesman Vastupāla.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. Merutuṅga, *Prabandha Cintāmaṇi*, trans. Durgashankar K Shastri, Forbes Gujarati Sabha, Bombay, 1934.
2. Rājashekharaśūri, *Caturviṃśati Prabandha*, trans. Hiralal R. Kapadia, Forbes Gujarati Sabha, Bombay, 1934.
- 3-4. Durgashankar K. Shastri, *Gujaratno Madhyakālina Rājput Itihās*, Pts I & II, Gujarat Vernacular Society, Ahmedabad, 1937 and 1939.
- 5-6. Dr. Hariprasad G. Sastri, *Mantrakakālina Gujarat*, Pts. I & II, Gujarat Vidyasabha, Ahmedabad, 1955.
7. MM. Gaurishankar Hirachand Oza, *Madhyakālina Bhāratiya Saṃskṛti*, Gujarat Vernacular Society, Ahmedabad, 1933.
8. Durgashanker K. Shastri, *Bhāratiya Saṃskāro ane Tenā Gujaratmā Avataraṇa*, Gujarati Sahitya Parishad, Bombay, 1950.
9. Narmadashankar Vallabhji Dvivedi, *Gujaratnā Aitihāsik Sādhanā*, Forbes Gujarati Sabha, Bombay, 1928.
10. Dr. Bhogilal J. Sandesara *Literary Circle of Mahāmātya Vastupāla*, Singhi Jain Series, Bombay, 1953.
11. Ramlal Chunilal Modi, *Lekha Sangraha*, Patan, 1953.
12. Ramlal C. Modi, *Dvāśraya Kāvyaṃā Madhyakālina Gujarātī Sāmājika Sthiti*, Gujarat Vidya Sabha, 1944.
13. Padmanābha-Virachuta, *Kāhnadade Prabandha*, ed Dr. K. B. Vyas, Pub. Rajasthan Puratattva Mandir, Jaipur, 1953.
14. Lāvanyasamayaśūri, *Vimala Prabandha*, ed. Manilal B. Vyas, Surat, 1913.

THE TITLES, DATE AND THE CONTEMPORARIES OF KRSNĀNANDA KAVIRĀJA, THE AUTHOR OF SAHRDAYĀNANDA MAHĀKĀVYAM.

By

S S MOHANTY & S C DASH

Introduction

The Orissa State Museum preserves three manuscripts of Sahrdayananda (S N), a Mahakavyam of fifteen cantos in Sanskrit¹. These three are written in Oriya script and they are collected from Khallikote (Dt Ganjam, Orissa), Khurdha (Dt Puri, Orissa) and Bhubaneswar (Dt Puri, Orissa). Only the Khallikote manuscript contains a colophone which mentions Kṛṣṇānanda Kavirāja (K N K) as the author of Sahrdayananda and who had a royal title "Sandhi Vīgrahika" (S V K). S N describes the entire episode of Nala-Damayanti in a simple and lucid style. The poet declares solemnly that he has no aspiration to compete with Śrīharsa, the scholar of rare erudition who had already written the Naisadhiya Cāritam dealing with the same episode. Nevertheless this Kavya in its simple but vivid picturesque background projects a complete life of Nala, and thus differentiates itself from the Naisadha Mahakavyam.

The problem

This Kavya has been printed and published by Mahamahopadhyaya Durgaprasād in Kavyamala series 32, 1930, by P T Vachaspati Dvivedi (Chowkhamba Bidya Bhavan, 1968) and P T Ananta Tripathy Sharma (Printed at Siromani Press, Berhampur, Orissa, 1958) has published the first Canto of this Kavya with Sanskrit Commentaries and Oriya translations. However, this article intends to discuss the date, the contemporary Sanskrit scholars, and kings and the meaning of the different titles of K N K on which the above scholars are almost silent.

1 A Descriptive catalogue of the Sanskrit manuscripts of Orissa (pp. 128-129)

(I) K. N. K. and Sriharsa

In the 7th verse of the first Canto, K.N.K. compares the author of Naisadhiya Caritam with the Sun and himself with a glow worm. Thus it is needless to mention that he is posterior to Sriharsa.²

(II) Relation with Visvanatha Kaviraja (V.K.J) and other Contemporary Sanskrit Scholars of Orissa

Verse No. 32 of the 3rd Canto of S.N. is quoted in the 8th Chapter of Sahitya Darpana (S.D.) a treatise on rhetorics by V.K.J.

The example *रत्नः महिषः* in the Lakshana Chapter, the comparison of the queen of Bhanudeva IV with Durga and the mention of different Colloquial Oriya words as citations of defects in the Chapter of defects in S.D. leaves no room for any doubt that Visvanatha was not born in Orissa. Though the Suryavamsi period marked the first renaissance in the Oriya literature, the Ganga Kings encouraged the Sanskrit learning and the Brahmanical lore in Orissa.³ V.K.J. has three works — S.D. the Narasingha Vijaya (N.V.) and the Chandrakala Natika (C.N.). In S.D., he mentions that his grandfather Narayana Dasa had defeated a great Pandit named Dharma-datta in the Court of Narasimha Deva, V.K.J.'s father Chandra Sekhar Mahapatra was also a great Sanskrit scholar. He wrote two works in Sanskrit the 'Bhasarnava' and the 'Puspamala' Natika. V.K.J. also mentions that Chandidasa was his ancestor. We thus present here the table as given in the introduction of C.N. to bring out the relation of K.N.K. with V.K.J.⁴

Narayana Dasa	Chandi Dasa
Chandra Sekhar Mahapatra (S.V.K.)	?
Viswanatha Mahapatra (Kaviraja and S.V.K.)	Krsnananda Mahapatra (Kaviraja and S.V.K.)

(III) Praising Narasimha Deva IV

V.K.J. and K.N.K. have both praised their patron King Narasimha Deva IV, in whose Court they flourished as Kavirajas. In N.V. we come across the verse.—

2 Commentary by P. T. Ananta Tripathy Sharma, Sahridayananda, Canto-1.

3 The Gayapati Kings of Orissa, Chapter 1, p. 1.

4 Historical Significance and the date of V.K.J. Chandrakala Natika, Introduction, Ed by S N Rajguru.

आहवे जगदुदङ्गराजमण्डल राहवे ।
 श्रीनृसिंहमहोपात स्वस्त्यस्तु तववाहवे ॥

In S N a similar verse is found after the traditional benedictory verse to Sarasvati in Sl 2 of Canto I

रत्नेद्रमेकः करजरेनैकविदारयन् श्रीमिव प्रपन्न
 स्वयच्छेपु स्तम्भेष्वनुविम्बदम्मात् कुवन्ननेक जयतां नृसिंह

The concluding verse of S N also mentions the name of its patron —

सस्मीर्यावदलकरोति हृदय विष्णोर्नृसिंहाकृते
 र्यावद्विष्णुपदे च धृजटिजटाजुटान्तरे श्रीरिति ।
 कृष्णानदकवे कपिञ्जलकुलशिरोदरातधृते
 तावत् काव्यमिव तनोतु मुहुदामन्त प्रमोदोदयम् ॥

(IV) Epigraphical Evidences

Besides a large number of Sanskrit inscriptions either on Copperplates or stone belonging to the Ganga period of Orissan history which have been discovered in the region upto Vizagapattam, we have a large number of Telugu and Oriya inscriptions belonging to the Ganga Period (1076 1435 A D)

(a) K N K. s name has been mentioned in the Lakuva (Lakshmi) Devi inscription of Saka year 1307 (1385 A D) placed at Sunhachalam.⁶

(b) Another inscription of the same temple (1396 A D) records that Kachu S V K the son of K N K. of Varanasi Kataka made a gift of five Madhas (gold coins) for receiving a Vishnu stotram⁷

(c) Dr S N Rajguru has pointed out that Ganga Prasasti of Sanskarananda Matha Copperplate of Narasingha IV of Saka 1316 (1394 A D) mentions the 11th verse of S N in a slightly modified form which is not placed in the Kenduli Copperplate grant of Narasingha Deva IV of Saka 1305 (1385 A D)⁸

(V) Observations

(a) V K J was a poet and a minister who flourished under two Ganga Kings Narasingha Deva IV (1378 1414) and Bhanudeva

⁵ Evolution of Oriya language and script by Dr K. B Tripathy

⁶ M. M. Chakravarti Vol. LXIV J A S B 1885

⁷ Vol. II pages LXXXVI A descriptive catalogue of Sanskrit manuscripts of Orissa.

⁸ Kendali Copperplate grant of Narasingha IV of Saka 1303 Vol V ORHJ April 1956.

IV who completed his work? before the second decade of 15th century

(b) It is interesting to note that though V K J has mentioned the name of Bhanudeva IV, Bhanudeva IV has not been mentioned by K N K.

(c) As it is seen from the internal and epigraphical evidences we can safely accept that K N K. had written S N during the period 1384-1394

Titles

(i) During the Ganga Period we come across several titles like Mahasenapati (the great Commander), Senanarendra (the Chief of the Army), Majni (Commander), Bahinipati (leader of a contingent), the Mahasandhivigrahi (the great minister of war and peace), the Sandhivigrahi (the minister of war and peace) but these titles lost their importance after the Ganga period¹⁰

(ii) The title Sandhivigrahi (S V K) is as old as the Gupta period Harisena the author of Allahabad pillar inscription is also entitled as a S V K. But during Ganga period there were many S V K's under one Mahasandhivigrahi.¹¹ The S V K.s were entrusted with the duty of drafting of Copper plates Charters for granting villages. They were also in charge of the foreign ministers office K N K and V K J are both S V K S

(iii) K N K and V K J are both called Mahapatra. Now it is a title of the Brahmin in Orissa. But originally it was meant for the ministers in charge of the revenue department¹²

(iv) Both V K J and K N K are born in the Kapinjala Gotra and they are Brahmins by Caste

Thus to conclude Kavyasahridayananda was written between 1384-1394 by Krsnananda, a minister of Brahmin Caste in the Court of King Narasingha Deva IV of Orissa

9 New data on the date of Ekavali and Sahitya Darpana Page 403 Studies in Orissan History Archaeology Literary History and Archives

10 The Gajapati Kings of Orissa p 125

11 Life in Mediaeval Orissa Ajodhya Prasad Sah p. 31.

12 History of Orissa by Dr H. K. Mahatab.

SUBHĀŚITAS IN THE MAHĀBHĀRATA

By

N. A. DESHPANDE

अनू	योऽनूचान म नो महान् ।	12-310-6b
अनूतम्-	न नमंयुक्त वचन हिनस्ति न स्त्रीषु राजघ्न विवाहकाले । प्राणात्यये सर्वधनापहारे पञ्चानूतान्याहुरपातकानि ॥ 1-77-16 (see 2-159 28 below)	
	पृष्ट तु साक्ष्ये प्रवदन्तमन्यथा वदन्ति मिथ्योपहित नरेन्द्र । एकार्यताया तु समाहिताया मिथ्यावदन्तमनूत हिनस्ति ॥ 1-77-17	
	पञ्च पञ्चनूते हन्ति दश हन्ति गवानूते । शतभञ्जानूत हन्ति सहस्र पुरषानूते ॥	5-35-26
	न नमंयुक्त वचन न गुर्वयं नात्मनो जीवितार्ये पञ्चानूतान्याहुरपात- कानि ॥ 2-159-28	
	न क्षमनूतस्यास्ति नानूतस्यास्ति सवति । नानूतस्याधिपत्यं च कुत एव गतिं शुभा ॥ अनूतं जीवितस्यार्यं वदन् स्पृश्यतेऽनूतं । प्राणप्राणेऽनूत वाच्यमात्मनो वा परस्य वा । अनूतं च न भाषेत मातापित्रो वृतेऽपि वा ।	5-105-9 7-164-99b 12-35-25a 13-110-46b
स्तक -	आशा धूर्तिं हन्ति समुद्रिमन्तक । जातमेवान्तकोऽन्ताय जरा चान्वेति देहिनम् ।	5-40-7a 12-169-22a
प्रम-	अन्नाद्गृहस्या लोवेऽस्मिन्मिक्षवस्तत एव च । अनात्प्राण प्रभवति अन्नद प्राणदो भवेत् ॥ 13 62-8 13-62-25a	12-18-27
	अन्नं प्राणा नराणा हि सर्वमग्रे प्रतिष्ठितम् । अन्नं ह्यमृतमाह पुराकल्पे प्रजापति । अन्नं भुव दिव ख च सर्वमग्रे प्रतिष्ठितम् ॥ अन्नं हि परमा गति ।	13 62-31 13-113 22b
प्रपण्डित -	आत्मन वमंदोयाणि न विजानात्यपण्डित ।	3-200-6b
प्रपत्यम्-	नानपत्यस्य लोका सन्ति । अनपत्यतैव पुत्रत्वमित्याहुर्धर्मवादिन । अपत्यं नाम सावेपु प्रतिष्ठा धर्मसहिता । इष्ट दत्त तपस्तप्त नियमश्च स्वनुष्ठित । सर्वमेवानपत्यस्य न पावनमिहोच्यते ॥	1-90-67 94-59b 1-111-23a 1-111-24

	अपय धर्मपतद धेष्ट विन्दन्ति साधव ।	1-111-31a
	इष्ट दत्तमधीन च यमाश्व बहुदक्षिणा ।	
	सर्वमेतदपत्यस्य वत्ता नाहन्ति पोरुशीम् ॥	2-38-2b
अपराधमुख -	शस्त्रेण निघन धाने ये गच्छन्त्यपराधमुखा ।	
	अयं सोवाग्नापत्तोपाम्, . . . ।	3-51-16
अपराध -	अज्ञानता भवेत्त्वश्विदपराध कृतो यदि ।	
	क्षन्त्यमेव तस्याह मुपरीदय परीक्षया ॥	3-29-29
अपासनम् -	अपासन हन्ति पशून्, ।	5-40-7b
अपृष्टः -	नापृष्ट वस्यचिद् वृषात्त चान्यायेन पृच्छत ।	
	भानवानपि मेधावी जडवत्सोरमाचरेत् ।	12-276-34
अप्रज -	अप्रजस्य महाभागा न द्वार परिचक्षते ।	1-111-11a
अप्रमाद -	अप्रमादोऽष्टदोष स्वात्तान्दोषान्परित्यजेयेत् ।	
	इन्द्रियेभ्यश्च पञ्चभ्यो मनसश्चैव भारत ।	
	अतीतानागतैभ्यश्च मुक्तो ह्येतं सुयी भवेत् ॥	5-43-21
अप्राप्त -	शिशनोदरदृतेऽप्राप्त करोति विषम बहु ।	
	मोहरागसमाश्रान्त इन्द्रियार्थवशानुग ॥	3-2-61
अवल -	अवलस्य कुत बोधो ह्यबोधस्य कुतो बलम् ।	
	अवलस्य कुतो राज्यभराज श्री कुतो भवेत् ॥	12-131-4
	अवला वै दिनश्चान्ति मुच्यन्ते च बलान्विता ।	12-289-18b
अबुद्धय -	बहुनापि ह्यविद्वांसो नैव तुष्यन्त्यबुद्धय ।	3-32-32a
अब्राह्मण -	अब्राह्मणे न हि ब्रह्म छद्म तिष्ठेत्त्वदाचन ।	12-3-31b
अभय -	योऽभय सर्वभूताना स प्राप्नोत्यभय पदम् ।	2-254-18b
अभयकराणि -	मानाग्निहोत्रमुत मानमौन मानेनाधीतमुत मानयज्ञ ।	
	एतानि चत्वार्यभयकराणि भय प्रयच्छन्त्ययथाकृतानि ॥	5-35-38
(वृषा)		1-85-24
अभिधीयमान -	यन्मन्त्रे भवति वृषा प्रयुज्यमाने	
	यत्सोमे भवति वृषाभिपद्यमाने ।	
	यच्चाग्नौ भवति वृषाभिहूयमाने	
	तत्सर्वं भवति वृषाभिधीयमाने ॥	13-7-28
अभिवादनशील -	अभिवादनशीलस्य नित्य वृद्धोपसेविन ।	
	चत्वारि सप्रवर्धन्ते कीर्तिरामुर्ग्रहो बलम् ॥	5-39 60
(न) अभीत -	नाभीतो यजत राजन्नाभीतो दातुमिच्छति ।	
	नाभीत पुष्टय वशिष्ठसमये रथातुमिच्छति ॥	12-15-13
अमर्ष -	अमर्षवशात्प्राप्तो न किञ्चिदुप्यते नर ।	5-122 41a
अमासभक्षणम् -	अमासभक्षण राजन्प्रशसन्ति मनीषिण ।	13 116-11b
अमात्य -	राजान राजपुत्र वा सवर्तयति य सदा ।	
	अमात्य पण्डिता भूत्वा स चिर तिष्ठति श्रियम् ॥	4-4-32
	अमात्यो हि बलादभोक्तु राजान प्रार्थयेत्तु य ।	
	न स तिष्ठेच्चिर स्थान गच्छेच्च प्राणसशयम् ॥	4-4 35
	अविजित्य य आत्मानममात्यान्विजयीयते ।	
	अजितात्माजितामात्य सोऽवशं परिह्रियते ॥	5-127-27

अमानुषा -	अमानुषेभ्यो मानुषारव प्रधाना ।	1-82-6a
अमित्राधम् -	न पुत्रघनलामेन न राज्येनापि विन्दति । प्रीतिं नृपनिशार्दूल याममित्राधदशनात् ॥	2-57-5ab
अमूढ -	यद्य हि मन्त्राध्यधरो मनीषी धर्मार्थयोरापदि सप्रणेता । एवमुक्तो सर्वमन्त्ररहीनो अनामृतस्य वरं कुर्यादमूढ ॥	5-32-19
अमृतम् -	मुदुर्गामिव पन्थानमनीत्य गुणबन्धनम् । यदा पश्येत्तदा दोषानतीत्यामृतमश्रुते ॥	12-207-29
अपाचन् -	अपाचतो भय नास्ति दत्तं च प्रतिगृह्यते ।	1-76-26b
अयुक्त -	नास्ति बुद्धिरयुक्तस्य नायोगाद्विद्यते सुखम् ।	12-275-16a
अपुष्पमान -	नापुष्पमानो हन्तव्या न च ग्राह्या बलातिशय ।	12-133-13b
भराजरुम् -	अराजके जीवलोके दुर्बला बलवतरं । बाध्यन्ते न च वित्तेषु प्रभुवमिह वस्यचित् ॥	12-49-62
भरिः -	पुनरावर्तमानानां भ्रान्तानां जीवितैरिषाणाम् । भेतव्यभरिणोपाणामेवायनगता हि ते ॥	9-57-13
अर्घ्यार्हा -	आचार्यमूर्तिवज्रं चैव समुक्तं वयुधिष्ठिर । स्नातकं च प्रियं चाह पङ्कज्यर्हान्निष तया ॥	2-33-23
अर्जुन -	अपि शक्यो रणे जेतुं वयस्यहस्तं पुरन्दर । नार्जुनं समरे शक्यो जेतुं परपुरजय ॥	7-68-28
अर्थ -	अनारम्भात् कार्याणां नार्थं सम्पद्यते क्वचित् । अर्थाद्धर्मश्च कामश्च स्वर्गश्चैव नराधिप । प्राणदात्रा हि लोकस्य विनार्थं न प्रसिध्यति ॥	10-11-33a 12-8-17
	अर्थेन हि विहङ्गिनस्य पुरुषस्याल्पमेघस्य । व्युच्छिद्यन्ते प्रिया सर्वा ग्रीष्मे कुस्रितो यथा ॥	12-8-18
	यस्यार्थास्तस्य मित्राणि यस्यार्थास्तस्य वाघवा । यस्यार्था स पुमाल्लोके यस्यार्था स च पण्डित ॥	12-8-19
	अधर्मेनार्थकामनं नार्थं शक्यो विवित्तता । अर्थैरर्था निबध्यन्ते गर्जैरिव महागजा ॥	12-8-20
	न वशित्वस्यचिन्मित्रं न वशित्वस्यचित्सुहृत् । अर्थैरर्था निबध्यन्ते गर्जैर्वनगजा इव ॥	12-136-104
	धर्मं कामश्च स्वर्गश्च हर्षं क्रोधं धृतं दमं । अपदितानि सर्वाणि प्रवर्तन्ते नराधिप ॥	12-8-21
	धर्मं शरीरसगुप्तिर्धर्मार्थं चार्थं इष्यते । नास्ति मंत्री स्थिरा नाम न च धृक्कमसौहृदम् ।	12-23 6a
	अर्थयुक्त्या हि जायन्ते मित्राणि रिपवस्तथा ॥ अर्थांश्च जीवताकोऽप्य न कश्चित्स्यचित्प्रिय ॥	12-136-14 12-136-145b
	अर्थ इत्येव सर्वेषां धर्मणामव्यतिश्रम । न श्रुतार्थेन धर्तेते धर्मवामाविति श्रुति ॥	12-161-11
	अर्थस्मावयवावेतो धर्मकामाविति श्रुति । अयसिदया हि निवृत्तान्भावैतो भविष्यते ॥	12-161-13
	योऽर्थो धर्मेण समुक्तो धर्मो यथार्थसंयुत । मद्विवाभूतसमुक्तं तस्मादेतो मताविह ॥	12-161-23
	येऽर्था धर्मेण न सत्या येऽधर्मण धिगस्तु तान् ॥	12-281-19a

	अपरयं धर्मफलदं श्रेष्ठं विन्दन्ति साधवः ।	1-111-31a
	इष्टं दत्तमधीतं च यज्ञाश्च बहुदक्षिणाः ।	
	सर्वमेतदपत्यस्य वत्ता नार्हन्ति पोटशीम् ॥	2-38-2b
अपराधमुखः—	शस्त्रेण निघ्नं काले ये गच्छन्त्यपराधमुधाः ।	
	अयं सोवोऽभ्यस्नोपाम् . . . ॥	3-51-16
अपराधः—	अज्ञानता भवेत्तु शिचदपराधः कुतो यदि ।	
	शन्तव्यमेव तस्याहुः सुपरीक्ष्य परीक्षया ॥	3-29-29
अपातनम्—	अपातनं हन्ति पशून् ।	5-40-7b
अपृष्टः—	नापृष्टः कस्यचिद् ब्रूयात्तु चान्यायेन पृच्छतः ।	
	ज्ञानवानपि मेधावो जडवत्सोऽपि मोक्षरेत् ।	12-276-34
अप्रज्ञः—	अप्रज्ञस्य महाभागो न द्वारं परिचक्षते ।	1-111-11a
अप्रमादः—	अप्रमादोऽष्टदोषः स्वात्तान्दोषान्परिबर्जयेत् ।	
	इन्द्रियेभ्यश्च पञ्चभ्यो मनसश्चैव भारत ।	
	अतीतानागतेभ्यश्च भुक्तो ह्येतः सुखी भवेत् ॥	5-43-21
अप्राप्तः—	शिशनोदरवृत्तेऽप्राप्तः करोति विषमं बहु ।	
	मोहरागसमाशान्त इन्द्रियायं वशानुगः ॥	3-2-61
अवलः—	अवलस्य कुतः कोशो ह्यवशस्य कुतो बलम् ।	
	अवलस्य कुतो राज्यमराजः श्रीः कुतो भवेत् ॥	12-131-4
	अवला वै विनश्यन्ति मृच्यन्ते च बलान्विताः ।	12-289-18b
अबुद्धयः—	बहुनापि ह्यविद्वांसो नैव तुष्यन्त्यबुद्धयः ।	3-32-32a
अब्राह्मणः—	अब्राह्मणे न हि ब्रह्म ध्रुव तिष्ठेत्सदाचन ।	12-3-31b
अभयः—	योऽभयः सर्वभूतानां स प्राप्नोत्यभयं पदम् ।	2-254-18b
अभयकराणिः—	भानानिहोत्रमुत भानमीन मानेनाधीतमुत भानयज्ञः ।	
	एतानि चत्वार्यभयकराणि भय प्रयच्छन्त्ययमावृतानि ॥	5-35-38
(वृथा)		1-85-24
अभिधीयमानः—	यन्मन्त्रे भवति वृथा प्रयुज्यमाने	
	यत्सोमे भवति वृथाभिपूयमाणे ।	
	यच्चाग्नी भवति वृथाभिहूयमाने	
	तत्सर्वं भवति वृथाभिधीयमाने ॥	13-7-28
अभिवादनशीलः—	अभिवादनशीलस्य नित्यं वृद्धोपसेविनः ।	
	चत्वारि सप्तवर्धन्ते कीर्तिरायुर्वंशो बलम् ॥	5-39-60
(न) अमीतः—	नामीतो यजते राजन्नामीतो दातुमिच्छति ।	
	नामीतं पुण्यं कश्चित्समये दातुमिच्छति ॥	12-15-13
अमयः—	अमयं वंशमापन्नो न किञ्चिद्वुध्यते नरः ।	5-122-41a
अमासभक्षणम्—	अमासभक्षणं राजन्प्रशंसन्ति मनीषिणः ।	13-116-11b
अमात्यः—	राजानं राजपुत्रं वा सवर्तयति यः सदा ।	
	अमात्यं पण्डितो भूत्वा स चिरं तिष्ठति श्रियम् ॥	4-4-32
	अमात्यो हि बलाद्भोक्तुं राजानं प्रार्थयेत्तु यः ।	
	न स तिष्ठेच्चिरं स्थानं गच्छेच्च प्राणसशयम् ॥	4-4-35
	अविजित्य य आत्मानममात्यान्विजिगीषते ।	
	अजितात्माजितामात्यः सोऽयं परिहृयते ॥	5-127-27

अमानुषा—	अमानुषेभ्यो मानुषाश्च प्रधानाः ।	1-82-6a
अमित्राधम्—	न पुत्रधनलाभेन न राज्येनापि विन्दति । प्रीतिं नृपतिशार्दूल याममित्राधदशनात् ॥	2-57-5ab
अमूढ—	वयं हि मन्त्राग्न्यधरो मनीषो धर्मार्ययोरापदि सप्रणेता । एवमुक्तो सर्वमन्त्रहीनो अनानुशस्य वरं कुर्यादमूढ ॥	5-32-19
अमृतम्—	सुदुर्गामिव पन्थानमतीत्य गुणबन्धनम् । यदा पश्येत्तदा दोषानतीत्यामृतमश्नुते ॥	12-207-29
अयाचन्—	अयाचतो भय नास्ति दत्तं च प्रतिगृह्यत ।	1-76-26b
अयुक्त—	नास्ति बुद्धिरयुक्तस्य नायोगाद्विद्यते सुखम् ।	12-275-16a
अयुध्यमान—	नायुध्यमानो हन्तव्यो न च ग्राह्या बलात्स्त्रिय ।	12-133-13b
अराजकम्—	अराजके जीवलोके दुर्वला बलवतरैः । बाध्यन्ते न च वित्तेषु प्रभुत्वमिह कस्यचित् ॥	12-49-62
अरिः—	पुनरावर्तमानानां भग्नानां जीवितैरपिणाम् । भूतव्यमरिशेषाणामेवायनगता हि ते ॥	9-57-13
अर्घ्यार्हा—	आचार्यमृत्विजं चैव समुक्तं च युधिष्ठिर । स्नातकं च प्रियं चाहुः षडर्घ्यार्हान्मृषं तथा ॥	2-33-23
अर्जुन—	अपि शक्यो रणे जेतुं वज्रहस्तं पुरन्दर । नार्जुनं समरे शक्यो जेतुं परपुरजय ॥	7-68-28
अर्थ—	अनारम्भात् कार्याणां नार्थं सम्पद्यते क्वचित् । अर्षाद्वर्मश्च वामश्च स्वर्गश्चैव नराधिप । प्राणयात्रा हि लोकस्य विनार्थं न प्रसिध्यति ॥	10-11-33a 12-8-17
	अर्थेन हि विहीनस्य पुरुषस्याल्पमेघसः । व्युच्छिद्यन्ते प्रिया सर्वा ग्रीष्मे कुसरितो यथा ॥	12-8-18
	यस्यार्थास्तस्य मित्राणि यस्यार्थास्तस्य बान्धवा । यस्यार्थाः स पुमाँल्लोके यस्यार्थाः स च पण्डित ॥	12-8-19
	अधनेनार्थकामेन नार्थं शक्यो विवित्सता । अर्थैरर्था निबध्यन्ते गर्जैरिव महागजा ॥	12-8-20
	न वश्चित्कस्यचिन्मित्रं न वश्चित्कस्यचित्सुहृत् । अर्थैरर्था निबध्यन्ते गर्जैर्नगजा इव ॥	12-136-104
	धर्मं वामश्च स्वर्गश्च हर्षं शोधं श्रुतं दमः । अयदितानि सर्वाणि प्रवर्तन्ते नराधिप ॥	12-8-21
	धर्मं शरीरसंगृप्तिर्धर्मार्थं चार्थं द्रप्यते ।	12-23-6a
	नास्ति मैत्री स्थिरा नाम न च हृत्कमसौहृदम् । अर्थयुक्त्या हि जायन्ते मित्राणि रिपवस्तथा ॥	12-136-14
	अर्थार्थौ जीवलाकोऽयं न वश्चित्कस्यचित्प्रिय ॥	12-136-145b
	अथ इत्येव सर्वेषां कर्मणामव्यतिशयः । न श्रुतः संपन्नं वर्तते धर्मकामाविति श्रुतिः ॥	12-161-11
	अर्थस्यावयवावेतौ धर्मकामाविति श्रुतिः । अर्थमिदं हि निवृत्तान्मावेतौ भविष्यतः ॥	12-161-13
	योऽर्थो धर्मेण समुक्तो धर्मो यश्चार्थसंयुतः । मद्विवाभूतसमुक्तं तस्मादेतौ मताविह ॥	12-161-23
	येऽर्था धर्मेण न सत्या येऽधर्मेण धिगस्तु तान् ॥	12-281-19a

अनर्थस्य न वामोऽस्ति तपार्थोऽधमिण कुतः ।	
तस्मादुद्विजते सोऽपो धर्मायां चो वहिष्कृतः ॥	12-161-24
धर्मं समाचरेत्पूर्वं तपार्थं धर्मसमुत्तमम् ।	
ततः वामं चरेत्परवात्सिद्धार्थस्य हि तत्पुत्रम् ॥	12-161-26
अनुप्राणादधर्मं च जयेदधर्ममुपेक्षया ।	
आधत्वा च जयेदशागम्यं सद्गविवर्जनात् ॥	12-266-9
अनित्यत्वेन च स्नेहं क्षुधं योगेन पण्डितः ।	
पादध्वेनात्मनो मानं तृष्णां च परितोषतः ॥	12-266-10
अर्थेषु ता परं दुःखमर्थप्राप्तौ ततोऽधिकम् ।	
जातस्नेहस्य चार्थेषु विप्रयोगे महत्तरम् ॥	1-145-24
अर्थं एव हि वेपाचिदनर्थो भविता नृणाम् ।	
अर्थं श्रेयसि चासक्तो न श्रेयो विन्दते नरः ॥	
तस्मादर्थायमा सर्वं मनोमोहविवर्जनात् ।	
अर्थं दुःखं परित्यक्त्वा पालिताश्चापि तेऽमुखाः ।	
दुःखेन चाधिगम्यन्ते तेषां नाशः न चिन्तयेत् ॥	3-2-40
यस्य चार्थार्थमेवार्थः स च ज्ञाप्यं कोविदः ।	
रक्षते मृतकोऽरण्या यथा स्यात्तादृगेव सः ॥	
अतिवेत्त हि यांश्चार्थां नेतरावनुतिष्ठति ।	
स वक्ष्य सर्वभूतानां ब्रह्महेव जगुप्सितः ॥	3-34-24
अर्थतयागो हि वार्यं स्यादर्थं श्रेयासमिच्छताः ।	3-34-63
सुमन्विते सुविप्रान्ते सुवृत्ते सुविचारिते ।	
मिद्वन्त्यर्था महाबाहो देव चात्र प्रदक्षिणम् ॥	3-37-5
अर्थं हि महतीं तृष्णां स च दुःखेन लभ्यते ।	3-245-2
अनित्या जित्वा भर्तृनामर्थसिद्धिर्भयाजयीः ।	4-19-3a
अर्थानां तु पुनर्द्वेषे नित्यं भवति सशयः ।	
अन्यथा चिन्तितो ह्यर्थं पुनर्मन्वति चान्यथा ॥	4-42-7
चलचित्तमनात्मानमिन्द्रियाणां वशानुगम् ।	
अर्थं समतिवर्तन्ते हसां शुष्कं सरो यथा ॥	5-36-38
सहायबन्धना ह्यर्था सहायाश्चार्थबन्धनाः ।	
अन्योन्यबन्धनावेतो विनान्योन्यं न सिध्यतः ॥	5-37-34
अर्थसिद्धिं परामिच्छन्धर्ममेवादितश्चरेत् ।	
न हि धर्मादर्थित्यर्थं स्वर्गलोपादिवामुत्तमम् ॥	5-37-44
आपत्त्या प्रतिवारजस्तदात्वे दृढनिश्चयः ।	
अतीते कार्यशेषजो मरोऽर्थेन प्रहीयते ॥	5-39-41
अतिवचेशेन येऽर्था स्युर्ध्वमंस्तान्निप्रमेण च ।	
अरेर्वा प्रणिपातेन मा स्म तेषु मनः कृया ॥	5-39-61
अन्यथा चिन्तितो ह्यर्थं पुनर्मन्वति सोऽन्यथा ॥	5-78-6a
अभूत्वा हि भवन्त्यर्था भूत्वा नश्यन्ति चापरे ॥	5-133-22
यथा चार्थपतिः कृत्यं पश्यतः न तथेतरः ।	7-5-3b
सुनीतैरिह सर्वार्था सिध्यन्ते नात्र सशयः ॥	7-133-50
तत्र सशयितादर्थार्थोऽर्थो नि सशयो भवेत् ।	
त जना बहु मन्यन्ते येऽर्थशास्त्रविशारदाः ॥	10-1-47
अमर्षेणैव चाप्यर्था नारब्धव्या सुबालिशैः ।	
सर्वेषां वर्मणा तात फले नित्यमनित्यता ॥	5-133-23
अथस्य पुरुषो दासो दासस्त्वर्थो न कस्यचित् ॥	6-41-36a

अधिन्ः—	दुर्लभोऽप्यर्थं वा नास्ति योऽर्थो धृतिमवाप्नुयात् ।	12-126-39a
अलभ्यम्ः—	अलभ्यं लभते मर्त्यस्तत्र वा परिदेवना ।	12-219-20
(न) अलम्ः—	नाल सुखाय सुहृदो नाल दुःखाय दुर्हृदः । न च प्रज्ञालमर्थम्यो न सुखम्योऽप्यल धनम् ॥	12-27-31
	नाल सुखाय सुहृदो नाल दुःखाय शत्रवः । न च प्रज्ञालमर्थाना न सुखानामल धनम् ॥	12-168-20
अल्पबुद्धिः—	अनिष्टसंप्रयोगाच्च विप्रयोगात्प्रियस्य च । मनुष्या भानसंदुःखैर्युज्यन्ते येऽल्पबुद्धयः ॥	11-2-18
अवदातानिः—	येषा त्रीण्यवदातानि योनिर्विद्या च कर्म च । तान्सेवेतैः समास्या हि शास्त्रेभ्योऽपि गरीयसी ॥	3-1-25
अवध्याः—	अवध्या ब्राह्मणा गावो स्त्रियो बालाश्च ज्ञातयः । येषा चाभ्रानि भुञ्जीत ये च स्युः शरणागताः ॥	5-36-64
	शास्त्रदृष्टानवध्यान्वि. समतीत्य जिघासति । म पथः प्रच्युतो धर्मात्कुपयं प्रतिपद्यते ॥	10-6-20

[To be continued]

The History & Culture of the Indian People

(In Eleven volumes)

Planned, Organised and Directed by Dr K. M. Munshi, President, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan.

General Editor R C Majumdar, M A., Ph D., F A S., F B D R A S., Director, History of Freedom Movement in India, Government of India, Ex. Vice Chancellor and Professor of History, Dacca University, Hon Head of the Department of History, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan

Assistant Editors A D Pusalkar, M A., LL B., Ph D., and A. K. Majumdar, M A., D Phil

This is the first history of India written exclusively by her own people which brings to bear on the problems a detached and critical appreciation. A team of over sixty scholars of repute present herein a comprehensive and up-to-date account of the political, socio-economic and cultural history of the Indian people

VOLUMES PUBLISHED

Volume I—'The Vedic Age' (From the earliest times to 600 B C) Price Rs 80

Volume II—'The Age of Imperial Unity' (From 600 B C to 320 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume III—'The Classical Age' (320-750 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume IV—'The Age of Imperial Kanauj' (750-1000 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume V—'The Struggle for Empire' (1000-1300 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume VI—'The Delhi Sultanate' (1300-1526 A D) Price Rs. 80

Volume VII—'The Mughul Empire' (1526-1707 A D) Price Rs 90

Volume VIII—'The Maratha Supremacy' (1708-1818 A D) Price Rs. 90

Volume IX—'British Paramountcy and Indian Renaissance (Part I) (1818-1905 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume X—'British Paramountcy and Indian Renaissance (Part II) (1818-1905 A D) Price Rs 80

Volume XI—'Struggle for Freedom' (1905-1947) Price Rs 80

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED
WITH PLATES, MAPS AND PLANS



BHARATIYA VIDYA BHAVAN

Kulapati K. M. Munshi Marg, BOMBAY-400 007